## **Bar-Ilan University**

# Rites of Replenishment: Observations on Priestly Purification

David Bar-Cohn

Submitted in partial fulfillment of the requirements for the Master's Degree in the Zalman Shamir Department of Bible, Bar-Ilan University

Ramat Gan, Israel

2022

This work was carried out under the supervision of Dr. Raanan Eichler, Department of Bible, Bar-Ilan University.

## Acknowledgements

I wish to express my gratitude to Dr. Raanan Eichler, whose guidance, knowledge, and incisive comments on my initial drafts contributed greatly to this thesis. I also thank Professor Jonathan Grossman for reading the thesis, and for offering not only encouragement but also detailed and constructive feedback.

# Table of Contents

Ab	stract	
1.	Intro	duction: Impurity and Purification in Priestly Texts
	1.1	Thesis and Scope
	1.2	Sources of Impurity in P
	1.3	Purification Rites in P
	1.4	Non-Ritual Forms of Impurity
2.	Lite	ature Review: Theories of Impurity11
	2.1	Disease, Demons, and Disgust1
	2.2	Symbolic Approaches
	2.3	The Life-Death Hypothesis
	2.4	Critiques of the Life-Death Approach15
	2.5	A Place for Multiple Theories17
3.	Rep	enishment from Deathly Forces19
	3.1	Impurity: A Deathly Force
	3.2	Purification: Rites of Riddance and Replenishment23
		3.2.1 Classes of Purification
		3.2.2 Sequence of Purification
4.	Pass	age of Time
	4.1	Until Evening (One Day)
		4.1.1 Evening as a Delineation Between Days
		4.1.2 Primordial and Regenerative Darkness
	4.2	Third Day
		4.2.1 Three Days as a Preexisting Purification Period
		4.2.2 A Unit of Time Less Than a Week
		4.2.3 Magical Completion
	4.3	Seven Days / Seventh Day

		4.3.1 Prevalence of the Number Seven	
		4.3.2 Abundance, Fruitfulness, and Perfection	
		4.3.3 Magical and Foreboding Number Seven	
		4.3.4 Regeneration and Filling	
	4.4	Eighth Day	40
		4.4.1 Eighth Day as a Rite of Dedication and Fulfillment	41
	4.5	Two Weeks	41
		4.5.1 Gender and Childbirth: Double Impurity as Double Loss	
	4.6	Thirty-Three Days / Forty Days	43
		4.6.1 Surviving an Ordeal	44
	4.7	Indeterminate Time	45
		4.7.1 Healing as Part of Purification	45
5.	Was	shing	48
	5.1	Implied Washing	49
	5.2	Immersion vs. Pouring	50
	5.3	Water Purification in the Ancient Near East	51
	5.4	The Functions of Washing in P	53
6.	Lau	ndering	56
	6.1	Biblical Laundering Methods	57
	6.2	Occasions for Laundering	58
	6.3	The Functions of Laundering in P	59
7.	Sha	ving	61
	7.1	Hair and Shaving in the Bible and Ancient Near East	61
	7.2	Shaving in P: Renewal, Purification, and Disposal	
	7.2	The Limited Scope of Shaving	
8.	Spri	inkling with Water Mixtures	
	8.1	Cedar Wood – עַץ אֶרָז	
	8.2	Red Yarn – שיי איי איי תוֹלַעַת	
		8.2.1 Red Signifying Blood	
	8.3	Hyssop – אַזוֹב	
	8.4	Spring Water – מִיִם חַיִּים.	
		8.4.1 Scope of Use	
		- r	

	8.4.2	Spring Water, Blood, and Life	77
8.5	Two V	Wild Birds – שְׁתֵּי צִפְּרִים חַיּוֹת	78
	8.5.1	Parallels to the Two-Bird Rite	79
8.6	Red C	Cow – פָּרָה אֲדָפָה	81
	8.6.1	Paradox of the Red Cow	
	8.6.2	A Life-Death Mixture	
	8.6.3	מֵי נִדָּה and מֵי נִדָּה	
9. Sac	rifices		87
9.1	Why (	Only Some Impurity Cases Require Sacrifice	88
9.2	Sacrif	ices Follow Purification	
9.3	Mean	ing of the Term פָּפֶר	91
	9.3.1	Interpretations of פָּר	
	9.3.2	Clearing/Covering Liability	
	9.3.3	Liabilities Covered by the חַטָאת, מחd אָשָׁם, and גאַשָּׁם	96
9.4	Comn	nunal Purification Sacrifices	
	9.4.1	Rites of Leviticus 16	100
	9.4.2	Priest and Tabernacle Consecration	101
	9.4.3	Levite Dedication	
10. Blo	od and	Oil Applications	
10.	1 Blood	l: The Life-Force	106
10.2	2 Oil: V	italizing and Renewing	108
10.	3 Parall	el Ear, Thumb, and Big Toe Daubing Rites	109
10.4	4 Mean	ing of the Term הְאֵא	111
	10.4.1	Common Thread Between הַטָא and הַטָא	
	10.4.2	2 Sin-Offering and Purification-Offering	
	10.4.3	3 Impurity and Sin: Minus and Plus	116
11. Co	nclusio	ns	
Bibliog	graphy.		120
Append	lix: Pur	rification Cases and Rites	126
תקציר			אא

## List of Tables

Table 1. Main sources of impurity	2
Table 2. Purification rites by case	5
Table 3. Purification rites by class	25
Table 4. Sequence of purification rites by case	27
Table 5. Linguistic parallels: Two-bird and two-goat rites	80
Table 6. Private sacrifices for impurity	87
Table 7. Public sacrifices for impurity	99
Table 8. Bodily applications of blood and/or oil	104
Table 9. Blood applications to sancta	105
Table 10. Oil applications to sancta	106
Table 11. Instances of הְאֵא/הִתְחַשָּׁא in P	112
Table 12. Purification cases and rites	126

# List of Figures

Figure 1. Strata in the experience of impurity	17
Figure 2. Purity-holiness continuum	111
Figure 3. Purification and sanctification	117

This study sets out to understand the priestly concept of impurity by examining rites of purification. Attempts by modern scholars to identify the rationale for biblical impurity have typically focused on seeking a common denominator among the impurity sources delineated in P: animal carcasses, genital flux (relating to childbirth, menstruation, and pathological discharges), the surface disease אָרַעָּת, human corpses, and specific cult items used in purification (e.g., ashes of the red cow). Since many of these cases can be understood as pertaining to the spread of disease, a long-held approach is that P's impurity laws are primarily centered around hygiene. Another line of thinking, based on comparative data, ties the cases to demonic invasion. A separate proposal argues that reactions of disgust and fear determine which phenomena are considered impure.

Others take a more symbolic approach, viewing the laws of impurity as communicating societal norms and ideals, pertaining to morality or social boundaries. A subset of this approach understands impurity as signifying death. Jacob Milgrom is a noted proponent of this argument, describing impurity and holiness as antonyms and as symbolizing death and life respectively. In this vein, he interprets all cases of impurity as being in some way associated with death. Skeptics of this argument point out that not all of P's impurity cases so easily fit the "life-death" model, contending that no one rationale is capable of accounting for all cases. Others go further, saying that P's cases comprise a set of eclectic inherited traditions, and therefore not even multiple rationales on the part of P can be said to account for them.

The first point to note is that these theories are not necessarily in competition with one another but rather occupy different strata within an impurity tradition: At the base are the phenomena themselves that human beings encounter in life. Above that are visceral (and societally reinforced) reactions to those phenomena—disgust, fear, or repulsion. These

i

reactions then drive social norms, taboos, measures of separation, and rites of purification. On top of this foundation come further explanatory layers, ways of making sense of this set of experiences.

The most widespread explanation in the ancient world for impurity is that it stems from the demonic realm. Demons, denizens of the underworld, are the purveyors of death and disease, and seize on vulnerability. P, however, advocates a theological framework wherein YHWH is the sole supernatural agent, and scholars point to P's impurity laws as a rejection of demonology. What then, if anything, is P's replacement for demons as the explanation for impurity?

Unlike Milgrom, who understands P's excision of demons as also ridding impurity of its potential to harm human beings, I propose that P's chief innovation is simply to depersonalize impurity, to rid it of supernatural agency apart from YHWH. However, there is still a realm of death, and the ancient world understood that there are deathly forces associated with phenomena such as childbirth, certain pathologies, and death itself. According to P, then, impurity is not seen as the invasion of demons but rather of a nonpersonified "deathly force." I agree, then, that there is a death component to impurity. However, contra Milgrom, I would say that death is not a characteristic of P's cases; rather, impurity is linked to the deathly underworld.

The textual evidence in P that impurity is conceived of as a deathly force is found not in the impurity cases but in P's remedial rituals for impurity. Scholars have pointed out the leitmotif of "life" that pervades P's purification rites, generally characterized as life banishing death, wherein purification is a rite of purgation. I concur with this aspect of purification but propose that in addition to purgative effects, purification in most cases is intended to *replenish.* Forces of death, apart from being something to remove, sap life from the subjects they afflict. Ancient Near Eastern texts attest to the harm, disease, and life-diminishing

ii

effects caused by demonic invasion. Purification replenishes and fills the void of life left by the deathly presence, infusing the purification candidate with renewed life and vitality.

The bulk of this study is a survey of P's purification rites and procedures. It begins by examining the most pervasive element in P's purification, auspicious time intervals: evening, three days, multiples of seven days, the eighth day, and forty days. These are typological numbers known in the Bible and ancient world to possess the magical capacity for conferring wholeness and regeneration. From there, we discuss the household hygienic rites of washing and laundering. The element of water is central to these rites, and we look at the way water is conceptualized in the ancient Near East, both as a cleansing agent and as a life-substance capable of endowing revitalization and renewal. Shaving is in the same category of personal hygiene, and its function in P appears to be mainly purgative, prescribed only in rare cases.

Next, we discuss the red cow rite prescribed for corpse contamination, and the twobird rite prescribed for אָרַעָת (of the skin or house), including the ingredients common to both: cedar wood, red yarn, hyssop, and מֵיָם חֵיִים (spring water). The motif of blood, life, movement, and strength runs through these elements, and they combine to create potent sprinkling formulas for driving out deathly forces and imbuing the purification candidate with life. We also look at the red cow rite and explore the anomalous feature of its ashes imparting impurity to its handlers while at the same time purifying a person exposed to a corpse.

After this, we examine the role of sacrifices in purification. I argue that the stage of sacrifices occurs only after impurity has been resolved, and that their purpose (as indicated by the accompanying verb כָּפָר) is to cover or clear various forms of personal liability with respect to YHWH. Finally, we look at applications of sacrificial blood and oil, performed only in the case of skin צָרַעַת and in priestly consecration. Blood is thought to carry the life-force, and oil is a substance that vitalizes and elevates status. I argue that transformations from impure to pure and from pure to holy take place along the same

iii

continuum of life-amplification. Both involve supplementing vitality, what I call adding "plus." In the case of impurity, plus cancels out minus—vitality counteracts the diminishing effects of deathly forces.

This survey of P's purification rites should provide a contribution on its own, as to my knowledge there is no similar treatment in modern scholarship. What I hope to further demonstrate is that the components, rites, and language used in P's purification texts point to an overarching "life" motif, wherein life-infused rites overcome the forces of death. Purification surely has a purgative function, but I argue—based on biblical and ancient Near Eastern examples—that these rites are also designed to revitalize and replenish.

# Introduction: Impurity and Purification in Priestly Texts

The root N.D.O, referring to impurity or the act of defiling, appears 286 times in the Hebrew Bible, with over sixty-five percent of instances occurring within a relatively small group of priestly texts in the books of Leviticus and Numbers.<sup>1</sup> The Priestly Source (P) discusses various cases of impurity in its legislation, and both it and the Holiness Code (H)<sup>2</sup> make occasional mention of the harm impurity is capable of inflicting. However, we have little to go on as to what impurity actually *is* according to the priestly authors. This study attempts to offer insight into the nature of priestly impurity, first by discussing its probable origins and then by surveying the purification rites prescribed in P. By examining the remedies, we can shine light on the malady.

## 1.1 Thesis and Scope

Three main arguments make up the core of this thesis: (1) Priestly impurity is conceived as a deathly force, owing to the ancient conception of impurity as demonic and stemming from the underworld. (2) The linkage between impurity and death is evidenced by the leitmotif of "life" that permeates P's purification rites. (3) Priestly purification serves both a purgative function, life banishing death, as well as a replenishing function, life-imbuing ingredients and rites countering the effects of the deathly presence.

This study will focus primarily on the evidence found in P (mainly Lev 11–16 and Num 19) but will also consider H. Where relevant, it will look at other biblical witnesses to

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>1</sup> Leviticus contains 150 instances; Numbers has 37 (chs. 5, 6, 9, 18, 19 and 35, all identified as P texts; see R. E. Friedman, *Bible with Sources Revealed*). Outside the Pentateuch, the next highest concentration is in Ezekiel, with 43 instances, or fifteen percent of all occurrences.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>2</sup> Chiefly Lev 17–27, and possibly insertions elsewhere. On H insertions, see I. Knohl, *Sanctuary of Silence*.

the concept of impurity, ancient Near Eastern cognates and parallels, biblical era material finds, as well as Second Temple literature and rabbinic writings.<sup>3</sup>

## 1.2 Sources of Impurity in P

P's purity legislation can be broadly grouped into five categories of impurity: animal carcasses, genital flux, אָרַעָת (surface diseases/outbreaks), corpse contamination, and several cultic items used as part of purification.<sup>4</sup>

Category	Source/Impure Substance	Duration of Impurity	Verses		
Animal carcasses	Carcasses of non-permitted animals	Until evening	Lev 11:24, 25, 27, 28, 31, 32		
	Carrion of permitted animals	Until evening	Lev 11:39, 40		
Genital flux	Childbirth/lochia	7 + 33 days (boy), 14 + 66 days (girl)	Lev 12:2, 4, 5		
	Pathological male discharge	After cessation, 7 + 1 days	Lev 15:13–14		
	Semen, sexual intercourse	Until evening	Lev 15:16, 18		
	Menstrual blood	7 days	Lev 15:19		
	Irregular vaginal blood	After cessation, 7 + 1 days	Lev 15:28–29		
<u>אָר</u> עַת	Skin outbreaks	After healing, 7 + 1 days	Lev 14:8, 10		
	Cloth/leather outbreaks	After fading, laundering	Lev 13:58		
	House outbreaks	If no recurrence, after sprinkling	Lev 14:48, 53		
Corpse contamination	Human corpses, bones, graves	7 days	Num 19:11, 14, 16		
Cultic items	Burned red cow/ashes/מֵי נְדָה	Until evening	Num 19:7, 8, 10, 19, 21, 22		

Table 1. Main sources of impurity

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>3</sup> Biblical verses and rabbinic citations are accessed from *alhatorah.org*. Translations of biblical verses are NJPS with adjustments.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>4</sup> Cf. Jacob Milgrom, who groups human and animal death together and offers a three-part division: "scale disease, pathological flux, and corpse contamination" (J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 44; also pp. 732–733). David P. Wright includes "cultic impurity" as a category; see D. P. Wright, "Unclean and Clean." I place animal and human death in separate categories, since the cases are not presented together, their purification rites are not similar, and the concern with animal carcasses may not be "death" but rather the consumption of taboo meat.

Category	Source/Impure Substance	Duration of Impurity	Verses
Cultic items (cont.)	Burned חַטָּאת bull and goat of Lev 16	After washing/laundering (?)	Lev 16:28
	Azazel goat <sup>5</sup>	After washing/laundering (?)	Lev 16:26

Some observations on the data above:

1. Primary versus secondary sources — Genital flux and skin אָרַעָּת are the only impurities sourced on/within a person. Other impurities are secondary, i.e., contracted via contact with or proximity to a source of impurity. This is not to say that secondary impurity is necessarily less severe. Corpse contamination is secondary and requires seven days of purification (Num 19:11), and sexual intercourse with a menstruating woman gives a man the status of a menstruant for seven days (Lev 15:24). Seminal/sexual impurity is a primary source but lasts only until evening (Lev 15:16, 18).<sup>6</sup>

Whether the cult items mentioned above are primary or secondary sources of impurity is less clear. Concerning the Azazel goat, the text explicitly states that the priest places the sins of Israel on the goat's head, and that the goat "carries" them into an uninhabited area (Lev 16:21–22). This may imply that sin, or at least a concentration of it, is a source of impurity according to P. The מָּאָת (bull and goat of Lev 16, and red cow) may also carry people's sins and/or impurities.<sup>7</sup>

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>5</sup> David P. Wright suggests that the water mixture of the אַצֹרָע rite should also be understood as generating impurity, based on the analogous rites of the Azazel goat and the אָצָרָע ; see D. P. Wright, "Unclean and Clean." <sup>6</sup> Regarding the apparent difference in severity of impurity between seminal emission and menstruation, Milgrom explains, "Menstrual blood is more polluting than semen... for the obvious reason that menstruation can last up to a week, but the ejaculation of semen is instantaneous" (J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 23–27*, p. 2457). However, in both cases, the impurity ends on the day the flow ceases (with menstrual flow presumed to last seven days); thus, one is not necessarily more "polluting" than the other.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>7</sup> Questions remain, however, as to why it is only the *burning* of the Day of Atonement תְּשָׁאת that imparts impurity (Lev 16:28), as opposed to other types of handling, and why no mention is made of impurity associated with burning in the primary instructions for the תְּשָׁאת (Lev 4:12, 21).

#### 1. Impurity and Purification in Priestly Texts

3. Waiting times and relation to realia — The seven-day duration for menstruation roughly matches the maximum number of days for a typical menstrual flow. The forty-day duration following the birth of a boy is approximately equivalent to the typical six weeks of lochial discharge following childbirth. Both these durations correspond to physiological realia. The eighty-day total following the birth a girl, however, does not match the duration of flow, though it may match ancient conceptions of realia (see Sec. 4.5.1). Waiting until evening, and seven days following corpse contamination, skin גָּרְעָת אָרָעָת in abnormal genital discharge, are not in any apparent way tied to physiological phenomena.

4. Waiting periods for people vs. objects — Objects are sometimes rendered pure without any waiting period, e.g., אָרְעָת on cloth or on walls, once it dissipates and is pronounced pure by the priest (Lev 13:58; 14:48, 53). The same, it seems, is the case for vessels sprinkled with מֵי נְדָה (Num 19:18, 31:23). Other objects require a wait until evening

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>8</sup> In an alternative interpretation, one might suggest that this extended duration does not imply any "residual impurity" left on the person but rather is simply intended to create a time buffer for recuperation following contact with impurity. However, the prohibition from entering an overhang applies to the מְצֹרֶע after being healed (Lev 14:8), and according to Num 5:2–3, for these three cases specifically—the גָּרָע, the person may not reside in the camp until seven days have elapsed (see also Num 31:19). This strongly implies that the person is considered impure and contagious during the seven days, and although this time may also be recuperative, it is not merely a distancing buffer.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>9</sup> Additionally, two of these cases of residual impurity—corpse contamination and skin/house אָרְעָת are the only ones to employ a sprinkling rite using roughly the same ingredients (see Ch. 8).

to become pure, e.g., bedding with semen on it (Lev 15:17) or a food vessel onto which the carcass of a creeping animal (שֶׁרָץ) fell (Lev 11:32). As for people, there is always some waiting period, at least until evening, with the possible exception of impurity from handling the Day of Atonement scapegoat or תְּטָאַת.<sup>10</sup>

### 1.3 Purification Rites in P

For the above cases of impurity, several rites are employed in the purification process: washing, laundering, shaving, sprinkling with water-based formulas (or with blood, in the case of sancta), offering sacrifices, and daubing with blood and oil. Note, however, that not all of these strategies are necessarily intended to "purify"—that is, directly remove or counteract impurity. Some, such as sacrifices, oil, and shaving may serve other functions as part of a person's full restoration following impurity.

Category	Impurity Case	Wash	Launder	Shave	Sprinkle	Sacrifice	Daub	Verses
Animal carcasses	Contact with prohibited carcasses	x <sup>11</sup>	х					Lev 11:25, 28, 40
Genital flux	Childbirth					Х		Lev 12:6–8
	Pathological male genital discharge	х	х			х		Lev 15:13–14
	Seminal emission, sex	Х						Lev 15:16, 18
	Menstruation							

Table 2. Purification rites by case

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>10</sup> In Lev 16, those who dispatch the Azazel goat (v. 26) and burn the bull and goat און (v. 28) are told to launder and wash, after which they may reenter the camp, but no mention is made of being "impure until evening." This differs from typical cases of one-day impurity, and also from Num 19:7 regarding the handlers of the red cow, where a wait is specified. It is unclear in Lev 16 whether waiting until evening is implied in these cases or whether the omission is deliberate. For a discussion on this issue, see J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, pp. 1050–1051.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>11</sup> Washing the body is not mentioned in Lev 11; it is, however, prescribed in two H texts: Lev 17:15, regarding eating carrier of permitted animals, and 22:6, regarding a priest who touches a creeping creature (אָרָע).

1. Impurity	and Purification	in Priestly Texts
-------------	------------------	-------------------

Category	Impurity Case	Wash	Launder	Shave	Sprinkle	Sacrifice	Daub	Verses
Genital flux (cont.)	Irregular vaginal blood discharge					х		Lev 15:29
<u>אָר</u> עַת	Skin outbreaks	х	х	х	x	х	х	Lev 14:7–9, 14, 25, 28
	Cloth/leather outbreaks		X					Lev 13:58
	House outbreaks				X			Lev 14:51
Corpse contamination	Contact with human corpses, bones, graves	х	<b>x</b> <sup>12</sup>		х			Num 19:18, 19; 31:19, 24
Cultic items	Handling red cow ashes/ מֵי וִדָּה	х	x <sup>13</sup>					Num 19:7, 8, 10, 21
	Burning the חַטָּאת bull/goat of Lev 16	х	x					Lev 16:28
	Dispatching the Azazel goat	х	х					Lev 16:26
	Sanctuary/altar				Х	х	х	See Ch. 10, Table 8.

Notes on the data above:

1. *Implied purification* — This table indicates only explicit mentions in the text and not possible implied rites. With menstruation, for example, apart from a wait of seven days, no washing or other purification procedures are explicitly prescribed. Similarly, for the postpartum mother and woman with an irregular vaginal discharge, no purification is mentioned apart from time durations and sacrifices. Scholarship is mixed as to whether and in which cases to assume implied purification such as washing.<sup>14</sup>

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>12</sup> Washing and laundering here may be prescribed due to contact with the red cow ashes/מֵי נְדָה/ rather than for corpse contamination itself (see Sec. 8.6.2).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>13</sup> Washing is explicitly prescribed only for throwing ingredients into the fire (Num 19:7) and burning the red cow (v. 8), and neither washing nor laundering is explicitly prescribed for touching the מֵי נְדָה (v. 21).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>14</sup> See the discussion in Sec. 5.1.

2. Secondary and tertiary contagion — The above table does not show other cases of secondary or tertiary contagion.<sup>15</sup> For instance, contact with people having genital fluxes requires waiting until evening and typically prescribes bathing and laundering (Lev 15). The first stage of postpartum impurity is said to impart a similar status as menstruation (Lev 12:2, 5), so it can be assumed to produce the secondary contagion described in Lev 15:20–23. Contact with corpse-contaminated persons constitutes tertiary transmission, for which the text specifies waiting until evening (Num 19:22). Regarding the priest orders it cleared before declaring it impure "so that nothing in the house may become unclean" (Lev 14:36), implying that it imparts secondary impurity. Entering a wait until evening (v. 46), and sleeping or eating in the house requires laundering (v. 47). No mention of secondary contagion is made in the laws of skin πχεγαπ [16]

3. Sanctuary impurity — Appended to the cultic category is sanctuary/altar impurity.

This is secondary contagion transmitted from people to sancta. Contamination of the sanctuary is mentioned in Leviticus 16, owing to unspecified "impurities" of Israel (Lev 16:16, 19). Elsewhere, sanctuary impurity is linked to cases of genital flux (Lev 15:31)<sup>17</sup> and corpse contamination (Num 19:13, 20). One reason given in the text for such sancta

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>15</sup> For a more detailed table showing purification from secondary and tertiary impurity, see the Appendix, Table 11.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>16</sup> One would expect that skin אָרַעַת does impart secondary contagion, given not only the rules for house אָרַעַת but also the requirement of quarantine, explicit banishment from the area of settlement (Lev 13:46), multiple stages of readmission, and the fact that skin אָרַעַת entails the most elaborate purification procedure of all impurity cases. Milgrom, in one place, presents אָרַעַת as not being contagious (J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, pp. 43–44) but elsewhere contends that it contagious, and that the אָרַעָת being isolated from the community accounts for the absence of discussion of secondary contagion in Lev 13 (ibid., p. 805). Rabbinic literature suggests that rules of secondary contagion apply to the אָרָעָת, e.g., מְעֹרָע, בְּמִשְׁכָר, וּבְּמָשֶׁרָע, בְּמִשְׁכָר, וּבֹיְלֶדֶת, וּבְמָלֶע, הָבָיוֹלֶדֶת, וּבְמָלֶע, הַרָּיָלֶדֶת, וּבַמָּלֵע, בַּמַשְׁכָר, וּמוֹשָׁב, מִטְמֵא (m. Zabim 5:6).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>17</sup> There is a question as to whether וְהַוְרְאֶָם אֶת בְּנֵי יִשְׁרְאֵל מְטַמְאָתָם (Lev 15:31) refers only to genital flows or to the whole of Lev 11–15. Milgrom remains uncertain; see J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 945. I would argue that it refers to Lev 15, based on the subsequent concluding verses (32–33) which mention only cases of genital flow. Note that Knohl and Milgrom identify Lev 15:31 as an H insertion; see I. Knohl, *Sanctuary of Silence*, pp. 69–70; J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 945–947.

contamination is lack of scrupulous purification,<sup>18</sup> though unnecessary/gratuitous secondary contraction of impurity may play a role.<sup>19</sup>

Sanctuary contamination lacks notable characteristics of other cases: (a) It is not generated by any discrete instances of transmission, nor even necessarily by direct/physical contact with the sanctuary.<sup>20</sup> Rather, the impurity collects on the sanctuary and altar from people inside the camp. (b) No time duration is specified for the impurity—it accumulates over time and requires continual purification. (c) The sacrifices prescribed for sanctuary purification consist of those brought by purification candidates (postpartum mother and recoverees from skin נָרָעָת and abnormal genital discharge) as well as daily and festival sacrificial rites (see Ch. 9). Purification of the sancta is achieved by blood rites of sprinkling and daubing (see Ch. 10).

## 1.4 Non-Ritual Forms of Impurity

In addition to the cases above, there are instances of impurity terminology elsewhere in priestly texts, including numerous occurrences in H (especially Lev 18–20). These include:

- Illicit sexual relations (Lev 18:20, 23–25)
- Necromancy (Lev 19:31)
- Molech worship (Lev 20:3)<sup>21</sup>

<sup>19</sup> This is as opposed to required contraction of impurity (e.g., tending to the dead) or impurity that is beyond a person's control (e.g., menstruation). To warn against these impurities would make little sense.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>18</sup> This is explicit for corpse contamination: כָּל הַנֹּגַע בְּמַת בְּנֶפֶשׁ הָאָדָם אֲשֶׁר יָמוּת וְלֹא יִתְחַשָּׁא אֶת מִשְׁכַן יְ־הוְה טִמֵּא (Num 19:13; see also v. 20).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>20</sup> Milgrom calls the phenomenon of sanctuary contamination "an aerial miasma" that "assaults the sacred realm even from afar" (J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 257). That the concept of airborne impurity exists in P is explicit in the case of corpse contamination, where merely being in the same tent as a corpse imparts impurity, i.e., without necessarily having direct contact with the corpse (see Num 19:14–15; also cf. Lev 14:8, 36, 46–47, where airborne impurity is implied in cases of y).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>21</sup> Such worship appears to involve casting one's son or daughter into fire (see 2 Kgs 23:10).

• Shedding of innocent blood (Num 35:33–34)<sup>22</sup>

These acts are said to defile:

- The people who engage in them (Lev 18:23–24, 30; 19:31)
- The sanctuary (Lev 20:3; cf. Ezek 5:11, 23:38)
- The land (Lev 18:25, 27; Num 35:34)

Some scholars characterize this category as "metaphorical" or "moral" impurity.<sup>23</sup>

However, it is not clear that the priestly authors understood the impurity generated by

idolatry, bloodshed, or illicit sexual relationships-including the idea of defiling the land-to

be metaphorical; it may have been construed as a very real and dangerous force.<sup>24</sup> As for

calling it "moral" impurity, this distinction is potentially misleading, since P's impurity

legislation also expresses moral concerns. For instance, P uses the morally-tinged term שֶׁקָע

("detestable," as well as the verb תשקצו) eleven times in Leviticus 11, many in precise

in parallel (see Lev 18, 20).<sup>26</sup>

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>22</sup> I would identify Num 35:34 as H on the following grounds: (1) The phrase אָלא תְטַמָּא only has parallels in H אָלָא תְטַמָּאוֹן, Lev 11:43–44, 18:30). (2) The phrase דָּי אֲנִי יְדְחָרָה is found exclusively in H texts (Lev 11:44–45 and nine instances in Lev 20–26; see J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 686). (3) The phrase אֲנִי שְׁכֵּן appears only here and Num 5:3, identified by Knohl as part of an H insertion; see *Sanctuary of Silence*, p. 86. Knohl identifies the whole of Num 35 as an H text; see ibid., p. 106.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>23</sup> Jacob Neusner distinguishes between "cultic impurity" and "moral impurity"; see J. Neusner, *The Idea of Purity* (1973). Milgrom uses the terms "metaphoric" and "moral" to describe this type of impurity; see J. Milgrom, *Leviticus* 17–22, pp. 1326, 1573–1574. Jonathan Klawans speaks about "ritual impurity" versus "moral impurity"; see J. Klawans, *Impurity and Sin*, pp. 21–32.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>24</sup> For a critique on the term "metaphorical" describing this impurity, see J. Klawans, *Impurity and Sin*, pp. 34–35.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>25</sup> Examples include אָקָא הוא לֶכֶם (vv. 12, 20, 23) and אָמָא הוא לֶכֶם (vv. 4, 5, 7, 38). V. 43, containing the parallel phrases אָל תְּטַקּצו , is identified by Knohl and Milgrom as an H insertion (see I. Knohl, *Sanctuary of Silence*, p. 69; J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, pp. 696–697), but every other instance of אָקָא ווו Lev 11 they identify as P (and in Milgrom's classification, P<sub>1</sub>, the oldest P stratum; see ibid., p. 697).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>26</sup> This is not to say that the terms טָמָא and אָמָא are synonymous. Milgrom, for instance, makes a compelling case that in Lev 11, אָקָא refers to animals whose consumption is prohibited yet whose carcasses do not impart impurity on contact; see J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, pp. 656–658. Milgrom cites numerous biblical examples pointing to something detestable or reprehensible but concludes that in Lev 11 it bears "a more precise, technical meaning" (ibid. p. 656). However, there is no reason to believe, even according to Milgrom, that the term אָקָע loses its basic, derogatory meaning when used in a technical context.

### 1. Impurity and Purification in Priestly Texts

Instead, I refer to this category simply as "non-ritual" impurity, since there are no purification rites prescribed for acts of idolatry, illicit sex, or bloodshed, the consequences for which are exile from the land (Lev 18:28, 20:22) and participating individuals being "cut off" from the people (Lev 18:29; 20:5, 18). This study examines purification rites and therefore will focus on ritual rather than non-ritual forms of impurity.

## 2. Literature Review: Theories of Impurity

What is the organizing principle for cases of impurity in P, and how is purification to be viewed? This chapter will survey some approaches offered by modern critical scholars.

### 2.1 Disease, Demons, and Disgust

One long-held explanation of priestly impurity is that it is focused on disease.<sup>27</sup> Threat of disease potentially covers a broad swath of cases: human corpses and animal carcasses, meat of certain animals (e.g., pig, hare, and scavenger birds) known to be disease-carriers, pathological genital discharges, and skin disease. In addition, menstruation and childbirth are described by the priestly authors using the root דורוד (Lev 12:2, 15:33, 20:18), connoting infirmity and weakness.<sup>28</sup> Purification in a hygienic framework involves distancing, quarantine, cleansing, recovery, and healing, which overlap with purification procedures in P. Less obviously pertaining to disease, however, are cases of seminal emission, including sexual intercourse, and cultic impurity, including sanctuary pollution.<sup>29</sup>

Others understand impurity as stemming from the invasion of demonic or malevolent forces.<sup>30</sup> Cases thought to carry demonic attachment include seminal emission, menstruation, childbirth, אָרַעַת, human corpses, and the Azazel goat.<sup>31</sup> To purify from

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>27</sup> This explanation has been advanced by Maimonides (*Guide for the Perplexed* 3.48) and Nahmanides (on Lev 11:9). Early critics of the theory include Abrabanel, who comments on Lev 11:13 that if health were the rationale, it places the Torah במדרגת ספר קטן מספרי הרפואה, "on the level of any minor book of medicine." He also objects that if health were the concern, why did it not forbid contact with dangerous animals and plants as well? <sup>28</sup> See J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, pp. 745–746; see also HALOT, s.v. קות.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>29</sup> For a discussion and critique of the hygienic hypothesis, see J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 719; *idem*, "Rationale for Biblical Impurity," p. 109.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>30</sup> See e.g., Lucien Levy-Bruhl's anthropological study, where he defines the term impure as "exposed to an evil influence" (L. Levy-Bruhl, *Primitives and the Supernatural*, p. 235). Baruch Levine views sanctuary impurity as a demonic contagion, see B. A. Levine, *In the Presence of the Lord*, pp. 55–91.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>31</sup> On demonic possession in childbirth, see S. R. Driver, *Book of Leviticus*, p. 75; in menstruation, see J. Milgrom, "Rationale for Biblical Impurity," p. 107; in sex/semen, see K. Elliger, *Leviticus*, p. 197; E. Gerstenberger, *Leviticus*, "Discharges in Men" (15:1–18); in χεγ, see A. Bertholet, *Leviticus*, p. 43; in human corpses, see Y. Kaufmann, *The Religion of Israel*, p. 55; in the Azazel goat, see J. K. Kuemmerlin-McLean, "Demons."

demonic forces involves rites of purging and exorcism. This explanation of impurity is attested in Second Temple, New Testament, and rabbinic literature.<sup>32</sup> One difficulty, however, is that if the priestly authors had a concern about dark spirits at the root of their purity legislation, they left little if any evidence to that effect.<sup>33</sup>

Another approach views impure substances and persons as objects of disgust and societal taboo,<sup>34</sup> wherein purification consists of rites of riddance and cleansing. This could in theory apply to most cases of priestly impurity, including human corpses, forbidden meat, genital fluxes, and בָּרַעָת The impurity of the מִי נְדָה, however, would be more difficult to frame in terms of disgust or taboo, since the red cow ashes if anything would have been valued and sought after for their purifying power. Also, this approach does not account for other materials arguably worthy of disgust, such as vomit or feces, that are not included in P's legislation.

Rationales of disease, demons, and disgust are not mutually exclusive, and some suggest applying different rationales across cases.<sup>35</sup>

## 2.2 Symbolic Approaches

A separate group of approaches to purity and impurity sees P's system as containing moral, allegorical, or symbolic significance, a line of thinking that goes back to ancient

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>32</sup> Jacob Neusner cites a Second Temple *Yaḥad* sectarian law stating that "the *zab* may not go to war because he may offend the angels," as well as New Testament depictions of Jesus exorcising demons, as evidence for the conception of impurity as a "material force" based on a belief in demons; see J. Neusner, "The Idea of Purity" (1975), p. 22. The rabbis clearly held a belief in demons and evil spirits (e.g., אָרָים and מַזִּיקין), as evidenced by frequent mentions in Talmud and Midrash.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>33</sup> Two possible exceptions are the Azazel goat (Lev 16:8, 10, 26) and שָׁעִירָם, "goat demons" (Lev 17:7). Even if Azazel is understood as a demon (as Milgrom suggests, see *Leviticus 1–16*, pp. 1020–1021), and even if the sin carried by the goat is understood as "impurity" (though Lev 16:21 says אָעוֹת, not אָעָוֹת, this hardly suffices as proof that P views demons as the rationale for its impurity system as a whole. As for שָׁעִירָם, this is a warning against foreign worship, and although it may indicate a popular belief in demons, the priestly writer is clearly trying to separate people from such belief, not support it.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>34</sup> See e.g., T. Kazen, "Disgust in Body, Mind, and Language," pp. 98–99.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>35</sup> See e.g., Yitzhaq Feder, who suggests that impurity cases fall into three categories: infection (pathological genital discharges, corpse contamination, and נְצָרְעָת), uncleanness/disgust (normal genital discharges), and transgression (bloodguilt and sexual immorality); see Y. Feder, "Contagion and Cognition," p. 165.

writings.<sup>36</sup> A notable advocate of the symbolic approach in more recent times is Mary Douglas, whose insights have had a significant impact on subsequent scholarship of impurity. In *Purity and Danger* (1966), Douglas describes impurity as a symbolic system expressing danger to the social order, where compromise to the wholeness of the body (e.g., body fluids out of place) represents a violation of societal boundaries. Purification is framed in terms of reintegration, restoration of wholeness, and completeness.<sup>37</sup> In her later work, Douglas depicts priestly purification (from impurity as well as sin) as an act of mending or repairing.<sup>38</sup>

Tikva Frymer-Kensky surveys P's impurity cases in "Pollution, Purification and Purgation in Biblical Israel" (1983), citing Douglas and understanding the cases to symbolize "boundaries between life and death," wherein impurity involves a brush with death and constitutes "a no-man's land between two realms that must be kept rigidly apart." As examples, she points to contact with human corpses, skin נו אין resembling decomposition and accompanied by rites of mourning,<sup>39</sup> the two-bird purification rite of the מִצֹרְעָת wherein one bird is slaughtered while the other lives, and postpartum impurity, where the mother "has been at the boundaries of life/non-life and therefore cannot directly reenter the community." Frymer-Kensky characterizes purification rites in terms of cleansing, healing, curing, and readmission.<sup>40</sup> However, she stops short of equating purity with life and impurity with death.

## 2.3 The Life-Death Hypothesis

August Dillmann's Exodus-Leviticus commentary (1897) is an early modern example of the theory linking priestly impurity with death. Because YHWH is a deity of "life,"

 $<sup>^{36}</sup>$  Early examples of a moral-symbolic approach to dietary laws can be found in the *Letter of Aristeas* (153–54) and Philo (*Laws*, 4.105–119).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>37</sup> See M. Douglas, *Purity and Danger*, pp. 46–57, 124; *idem*, "Atonement in Leviticus," pp. 120–123.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>38</sup> See M. Douglas, "Atonement in Leviticus," pp. 117–118.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>39</sup> The בְּנָדָיו יִהְיוּ פְרַמִים וְרָאשׁוֹ יִהְיֶה פָרָמִים וְרָאשׁוֹ יִהְיֶה פָרָמִים וְרָאשׁוֹ יִהְיָה יָהְיָה פָרָמִים יָאֲטֶה, "his clothes shall be rent, his head shall be left bare, and he shall cover over his upper lip" (Lev 13:45). These are customs for mourning over the dead attested elsewhere in P (Lev 10:6) and in Ezekiel (24:17).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>40</sup> T. Frymer-Kensky, "Pollution, Purification and Purgation," pp. 400–403.

Dillmann contends, death and decomposition must be excluded from the divine realm. Such exclusion pertains first and foremost to human corpses but extends also to death-like skin afflictions and even to genital flows and diseases that produce temporary weakness.<sup>41</sup> Several scholars in the 1960–70's similarly assert an association between impurity and death.<sup>42</sup>

Gordon Wenham in his Leviticus commentary (1981) associates holiness with life and impurity with death. He graphically charts out statuses in the priestly system, grouping "life/normality" together with "holy" on one end of the spectrum, moving to "less holy," to "blemished holiness," to "unclean," and finally to "death/total disorder."<sup>43</sup> In his essay "Why Does Sexual Intercourse Defile?" (1983), Wenham argues that loss of semen or blood constitutes a loss of "life-liquids" and imparts impurity because it moves a person closer to the "death" side of the spectrum.<sup>44</sup>

Edward Greenstein in "Biblical Law" (1984) describes impurity as "blemishes in the condition of createdness" and interprets the priestly impurity of Lev 12–15 as constituting "leaks" of blood or a life-sustaining fluid. Defilement, he suggests, is induced by contact with "death or a life-leak."<sup>45</sup> Greenstein interprets purification in line with the life-leaks approach, as rites to restore life that is lost/depleted, describing a postpartum mother's period of impurity as rehabilitation and stating regarding blood rites that "blood, symbolizing life, serves as an instrument of purification."<sup>46</sup>

Jacob Milgrom, in an early article (1981) discussing the prohibition of boiling a kid in its mother's milk (Exod 23:19, 34:26; Deut 14:21), states that "The comingling of holiness

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>41</sup> A. Dillmann, *Exodus und Leviticus*, p. 523.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>42</sup> See e.g., G. von Rad, *Old Testament Theology*, p. 272; W. Kornfeld "Reine und Unreine," pp. 134–147; N. H. Snaith, *Leviticus & Numbers*, p. 106; W. Paschen, *Rein und Unrein*, p. 63; E. Feldman, *Defilement and Mourning*, pp. 35–37; N. Füglister, "Sühne durch Blut," pp. 143–165. (Most of these are cited by Milgrom as precursors to his own theory; see J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 1002.)

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>43</sup> See G. J. Wenham, *Leviticus*, p. 77 n. 34; see also pp. 25–26.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>44</sup> See G. J. Wenham, "Why Does Sexual Intercourse Defile (Lev. 15,18)?", pp. 432–434.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>45</sup> E. Greenstein, "Biblical Law," p. 95. The "life-leaks" interpretation is adopted by Baruch Schwartz in his JSB commentary; see B. J. Schwartz, "Leviticus," p. 232.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>46</sup> E. Greenstein, "Biblical Law," p. 95.

and impurity is forbidden on pain of death; so the comingling of life and death is equally disastrous"—referring to milk, "the symbol of life," being used as an agent of death.<sup>47</sup> Later, in the first of his three-volume Leviticus commentary (1991), Milgrom builds off of Dillmann and others<sup>48</sup> to more fully develop the idea that priestly impurity is equated with death. Holiness and impurity are portrayed as antonyms, representing the "forces of life" and "forces of death" respectively.<sup>49</sup> A human corpse is thus an obvious prime source of impurity, but Milgrom argues that other impurities are death-tinged as well: Genital discharges of blood and semen "represent the life force; their loss represents death." Skin אַרְעָת (which extends to אַרְעָת on other surfaces) has the "appearance" of death.<sup>50</sup> As for animal carcasses, Milgrom explains that animal life is inviolable as a general rule, and their death imparts impurity. The few animals permitted for food are exceptions to this rule, and even then, their blood/life-force must be drained before consumption.<sup>51</sup>

## 2.4 Critiques of the Life-Death Approach

The life-death hypothesis of impurity as well as Milgrom's thesis have had their critics. Howard Eilberg-Schwartz in *The Savage in Judaism* (1990) challenges Milgrom based on cases where signs of life are equated with impurity. His examples include the laws of skin אָרַעַת, where the appearance of י, "living flesh," renders a person impure (Lev 13:10, 14), and postpartum blood, which he terms "a sign par excellence of reproductive success." Eilberg-Schwartz proposes an alternative theory: the less controllable a bodily fluid

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>47</sup> J. Milgrom, "A Kid in Its Mother's Milk," pp. 7–8.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>48</sup> See notes 41–42. Note that Milgrom (1991) does not cite Greenstein (1985), nor does Greenstein cite Milgrom's 1981 article.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>49</sup> See J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, pp. 46–47, 686, 767–768, 1002–1003.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>50</sup> Milgrom cites the example of Moses praying that the אָרַעַת afflicted Miriam should not be "like the dead" with her flesh partly eaten away: אַל נָא תְהִי בַּמֵת אֲשֶׁר בְּצֵאתוֹ מֵרֶחֶם אִמוֹ וַיֵּאָכֵל חֲצִי בְשָׂרוֹ (Num 12:12). <sup>51</sup> See J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 46.

is, the more it pollutes.<sup>52</sup> Hayam Maccoby in *Ritual and Morality* (1999) contends with several aspects of Milgrom's impurity theory, among them the notion that because blood symbolizes life, its loss is equated with death and thus generates impurity.<sup>53</sup> Maccoby points out that only vaginal blood is a source of impurity, not blood loss in general (e.g., from a wound),<sup>54</sup> a point which Milgrom later concedes.<sup>55</sup> Regarding seminal emission representing a loss of life, Maccoby grants this as a possibility for involuntary ejaculation (i.e., nocturnal emission) but says that this can hardly be the case for sexual intercourse, where the emission produces new life. He states further that no single rationale, including death, is equipped to encompass all the different cases of impurity.<sup>56</sup>

Others have argued further, contra Milgrom, Douglas, and others, that any attempt to systematize P's impurity legislation is an interpretive misstep. Tracy Lemos, for instance, casts doubt on whether P possesses a consistent purity system, due to the fact that rituals continually evolve, and given the likelihood that differing perspectives on impurity were held contemporaneously.<sup>57</sup> Lemos also points out that P does not provide reasons as to why specific phenomena or substances defile and suggests that P presumes that the reasons were obvious to the audience and simply went without saying.<sup>58</sup> William Gilders, on the use of blood in purification rites, argues that P does not offer an explanation because the writers themselves did not know it, having inherited a set of social conventions already in place in ancient Israel. For this reason, the text reflects a focus on praxis rather than any ideology or

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>52</sup> See H. Eilberg-Schwartz, *The Savage in Judaism*, pp. 186–187, 248 n. 19; *idem*, "Israel in the Mirror of Nature," p. 26. Milgrom rebuffs Eilberg-Schwartz's critiques as well as his theory; see J. Milgrom, *Leviticus* 23–27, pp. 2456–2458.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>53</sup> See J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 767.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>54</sup> See H. Maccoby, *Ritual and Morality*, pp. 30–31.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>55</sup> See J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 23–27*, p. 2463.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>56</sup> See H. Maccoby, *Ritual and Morality*, pp. 31–32.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>57</sup> See T. M. Lemos, "Where There Is Dirt, Is There System?", pp. 288–290.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>58</sup> See ibid., p 290.

systematic understanding.<sup>59</sup> If there is no system to P's impurity laws, then looking for one or more principles accounting for P's cases constitutes a methodological error.

## 2.5 A Place for Multiple Theories

Theories of disease, disgust, dirt, demons, and death each strain in the effort to apply them across all of P's cases. Even mixing and matching rationales across cases has the mark of artifice in light of the argument that P's cases constitute inherited traditions rather than being based on one or more principles. However, I would suggest that impurity traditions are multi-layered and that the various theories often occupy different strata.

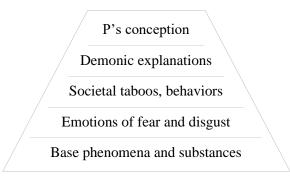


Figure 1. Strata in the experience of impurity

At the foundation are raw experiences—phenomena such as illness, menstruation, and death, and material substances such as blood, semen, and carcasses. Encounters with these phenomena and substances elicit emotions such as fear or disgust, reactions that may in part be instinctual but are also societally reinforced. These emotions give rise to behaviors— taboos, bans, rules of separation, and purification procedures. To make sense of this set of experiences, people develop explanatory overlays, and the nature of the explanation then feeds back into behavior, further shaping purification rites. The dominant explanation

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>59</sup> See W. K. Gilders, "Blood as Purificant," pp. 77-83.

package in the ancient world for impurity—of which ancient Israel would certainly have been aware—is the presence of demonic and malevolent forces. Scholars such as Yehezkel Kaufmann argue that the biblical authors rejected demonology,<sup>60</sup> and Milgrom and others have suggested "death" as an alternative explanation underlying P's concept of impurity.

Many of the above theories of impurity are therefore not in competition but rather complement one another to form a picture of impurity traditions, coexisting simultaneously in different strata. Interpretations of P's understanding of impurity are not necessarily incompatible with the demonic theory (indeed, P may be responding to or adapting it), just as the demonic theory is not incompatible with theories of disgust and disease. Whatever explanations of impurity the priestly writers or their contemporaries possessed, this would not prevent them from also experiencing emotions such as fear or disgust.

In a similar vein, the study undertaken here is not an argument against anthropological theories about the origins of impurity traditions, nor against those who emphasize the prevalence of the demonic explanation in the ancient world. Indeed, my proposal is that the pervasive belief in demons, in a demythologized form, underlies P's impurity cases, in what will be shown to be a modified version of the life-death hypothesis.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>60</sup> See Y. Kaufmann, *The Religion of Israel*, pp. 63–67.

## 3. Replenishment from Deathly Forces

### 3.1 Impurity: A Deathly Force

Among ancient Israel's neighbors, impurity is associated with demonic incursion. For instance, one Babylonian incantation reads: "An evil spirit . . . hath overcome him... something impure for the body hath seized upon him..."<sup>61</sup> Another states: "an evil demon, a god that roameth by night, whose unclean hands know no reverence..."<sup>62</sup> Demons are inhabitants of the underworld, the domain of death,<sup>63</sup> with the power to inflict harm upon the world of the living.<sup>64</sup> The Mesopotamian demons *lilû* (incubus, male) and *lilîtu* (succubus, female) suck the life out of their victims by sexually assaulting them during sleep.<sup>65</sup> Demons are entities "Who take away the wife from the loins of man, who take away the child from the [...] of the nursemaid."<sup>66</sup> They are also deemed to be the cause of illness.<sup>67</sup> Ancient Egyptian texts liken disease to demonic possession, as exemplified in the greeting, "Welcome, O great god who expels disease-demons!"<sup>68</sup> They make a person weak, e.g., "(the demons) have compressed my chest, weakened my inside, bound my arms."<sup>69</sup>

Being a widespread belief in the ancient Near East, demonic associations with impurity would certainly have been known in Israel. Indeed, as noted previously, P's cases

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>61</sup> Utukki Limnûti, Tablet V; translation by R. C. Thompson, Devils and Evil Spirits, p. 79.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>62</sup> *Utukki Limnûti*, Tablet "B," obverse; ibid., p. 131. Note, however, the view that in Assyro-Babylonian texts, demonic possession is a "symptom" of impurity rather than a cause; see e.g., I. Cranz, "Priests, Pollution and the Demonic," pp. 79–80.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>63</sup> The underworld or realm of the dead is thought to be the birthplace of demons; see D. P. Wright, *Disposal of Impurity*, p. 250 n. 48.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>64</sup> See H. Frey-Anthes, "Concepts of 'Demons' in Ancient Israel," pp. 38–43; J. K. Kuemmerlin-McLean, "Demons."

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>65</sup> See S. Bhayro and C. Rider, *Demons and Illness*, p. 164. Lilith is known in ancient Semitic folklore (and later in rabbinic literature) as a demonic presence that seduced and killed men and posed a danger to nursing mothers and infants; see B. D. Sommer, "Isaiah," p. 851.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>66</sup> From "Inanna's Descent to the Nether World," ANET 3, p. 57.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>67</sup> See H. Frey-Anthes, "Concepts of Demons in Ancient Israel," pp. 41–42; J. K. Kuemmerlin-McLean, "Demons."

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>68</sup> From "The Legend of the Possessed Princess," ANET3, p. 30 (n 13).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>69</sup> See *CADe*, p. 167, s.v. *enēšu*.

have known parallels elsewhere in the ancient world involving demonic invasion.<sup>70</sup> How does P relate to this belief? Baruch Levine suggests that the concept is to some extent retained, with blood rites in the sanctuary designed to counteract demonic forces."<sup>71</sup> Milgrom claims that some purification rites in P retain their original exorcistic features, describing the two-bird rite for the אַיָּבֶע as a "a rite of exorcism... preserved in nearly pristine form."<sup>72</sup> However, he argues that these are essentially ritual artifacts, and that the priestly writers have rooted out the demonic from their religious ideology,<sup>73</sup> including stripping impurity of its potency and ability to do harm.<sup>74</sup> He cites Kaufmann, who points out that whereas the rules regarding the realm of the holy are often presented as a danger to life and limb, those pertaining to impurity "are nowhere represented as intrinsically dangerous."<sup>75</sup> Kaufmann's conclusion about impurity, after being stripped of the demonic layer, is its being "no more than a condition—one might almost say a religious-aesthetic state."<sup>76</sup>

According to Milgrom, impurity is viewed by P not merely as a condition but as symbolic of death and thus as an important component within P's theology. Proponents of the life-death hypothesis of impurity typically presume that death (or leaked life) is the common denominator across P's impurity cases. While human corpses certainly qualify, and animal carcasses (albeit only those unfit for consumption) might be understood to be impure on account of death, other cases such as צָרַעָת, genital discharges, and cultic impurity require more interpretive effort to link them to death. Indeed, childbirth and sexual relations, even if

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>70</sup> See Sec. 2.1.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>71</sup> See B. A. Levine, In the Presence of the Lord, pp. 77–80.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>72</sup> See J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 275.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>73</sup> Says Milgrom, "In the Bible, impurity has been thoroughly eviscerated of any mythological or demonic content" (J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 316; see also pp. 42–44, 259).

 <sup>&</sup>lt;sup>74</sup> For Milgrom, impurity is potent with respect to the sancta but poses no harm to people; see ibid., pp. 43, 316.
 <sup>75</sup> Y. Kaufmann, *The Religion of Israel*, pp. 103–104. See J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 259. However,

impurity is what creates a danger in sacred spaces: וְלָא יָמֵתוּ בְּטַמְאָתָם בְּטַמְאָתָם בְּטַמְאָתָם בְּטַמְאָתָם בְּטַמְאָתָם בְּטַמְאָתָם בְּטַמְאָתָם בָּטַמְאָתָם בָּטַמְאָתָם אָשֶׁר בְּתוֹכָם (Lev 15:31). <br/>  $^{76}$  Y. Kaufmann, , *The Religion of Israel*, p. 103.

they involve a loss of life-fluids (blood and semen), are parade examples of "life" events, and interpretations characterizing them in terms of death suffer from considerable strain.

Linking impurity cases with death, I would argue, is close to but ultimately misses the mark. Rather than assert that death is a feature of P's *cases*, I propose that the death component stems from impurity being sourced in the deathly, underworldly realm whence the demons hail. Yes, priestly ideology denies independent power of supernatural agents apart from YHWH, a point which Kaufmann makes repeatedly.<sup>77</sup> However, the rejection of demonic autonomy does not necessitate adopting the position that there is nothing whatsoever demonic or foreboding about impurity. In fact, a much more natural transformation from demon belief is to say that there are indeed dark forces at play in the world, only they are not independent agents, and their existence and ability to act is entirely dependent upon YHWH's will.

This is a point Kaufmann maintains as well. Demons and angels, rather than being connected to antecedents in the old Israelite pantheon, are described as nameless destructive agents of YHWH, such as גָּשֶׁר (e.g., Exod 30:12, Num 8:19), מַשְׁחִית (e.g., Exod 12:13), גָשֶׁר (e.g., Exod 12:24).<sup>78</sup> There are also forces Kaufmann refers to as "spirits of impurity," such as and בִּיָּשִׁרִים (Deut 32:24).<sup>78</sup> There are also forces Kaufmann refers to as "spirits of impurity," such as גָיָלִית (Deut 32:17), שְׁעִירִם (Lev 17:7), עָנָאַרַג (e.g., Lev 16:8), and בֹּיִלִית (Isa 34:14), which even when named hold no autonomous power separate from YHWH.<sup>79</sup>

When this same principle is applied to impurity, it does not tell us that demons associated with pollution simply vanish into oblivion. Rather, they are no longer autonomous; they lose their mythological character. What is left, therefore, is impurity as a nameless, underworldly, deathly force that surrounds the same cases of impurity, and over which YHWH maintains exclusive control. Priestly impurity lacks the ravaging, destructive force of a  $\eta \mathfrak{Y}$  or

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>77</sup> Ibid., pp. 60–121, passim. See also, R. E. Friedman, *Who Wrote the Bible*, pp. 191–192; *idem*, *Bible with Sources Revealed*, p. 12.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>78</sup> The term רְשָׁר, says Kaufmann, is indeed the name of a Canaanite and Syrian god but is "a verbal reminiscence only, without mythological overtones" See Y. Kaufmann, *The Religion of Israel*, pp. 63–65.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>79</sup> Ibid., p. 64.

it is a deathly force rather than deadly one. At the same time, however, it does leave in its wake a sense of degraded or eroded life, loss of vital force. Physical symptoms of illness or weakness are associated with cases such as אָרָעָת, childbirth, menstruation, seminal emission, and pathological discharge. These reinforce the belief that underworldly, life-sapping forces have invaded the impure person.

P's impurity thus retains its potency as a dark and deathly force, and this is what links impurity to death—not P's cases. The deathly presence, as perhaps expected, surrounds instances of human death (leading to the misconception that impurity cases somehow all pertain to death/erosion of life), but it also attaches to situations that have little or nothing to do with death, such as childbirth, menstruation, and sexual intercourse. The common denominator among P's cases, then, is the fact that they are phenomena that have been designated as impure—and associated with deathly, underworldly forces—from Israel's antiquity. Thus, we can say two things at once about P's cases: (1) they are inherited by tradition, not the product of one or more principles, and (2) they possess a deathly character due to impurity being linked to the forces of the underworld.

How then do we understand items P deems not susceptible to impurity: springs or cisterns (Lev 11:36), or food that does not come into contact with water (v. 34), including dry seeds meant to be sown (vv. 37–38)? Some explain these rules based on practical, life-and-death considerations. Drinking water is such a basic and vital (and often scarce) commodity that it could not be allowed to become impure,<sup>80</sup> which could of course be said for food and seed stores. In other words, deathly forces have no effect in these instances because believing otherwise would place people's lives at considerable risk.<sup>81</sup>

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>80</sup> See, E. Gerstenberger, *Leviticus*, "Defilement (vv. 24-47)"; G. J. Wenham, *Leviticus*, "Swarming Creatures and the Pollution They Cause (29–38)."

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>81</sup> Rabbinic tradition details countless rules regarding the transmissibility of impurity, including what items and materials are susceptible and which are not, but such a survey is well beyond the scope of this study.

### 3.2 Purification: Rites of Riddance and Replenishment

In the ancient world, where impurity is understood as a demonic incursion, purification entails exorcism, as exemplified by a Babylonian incantation: "Nin-Anna, the mighty Scribe of the Underworld, reciteth a purifying incantation before me. By Ningirsu, master of the sword, mayest thou be exorcised! Evil Spirit, evil Demon, evil Ghost... unto my body may they not draw nigh..."<sup>82</sup> In addition to the claim made by Milgrom and others that purification procedures such as the two-bird rite have exorcistic origins, P's language also implies that impurity, albeit without reference to demons, is something to be excised. Phrasing such as אָל הָמָאָתוֹ בָּוֹ Dimin (Lev 7:20), and יך אָמָאָתוֹ בָּוֹ אָיָ ייָרָכָּרָ מוֹש אָיָ אָיָ ייָ אָמָאָתוֹ בָּוֹ אַיָּ מַמָּאָתוֹ בָּוֹ impurity is yet on him" (Num 19:13), indicate that impurity is conceived by P as a presence "upon" a person. Resolving impurity involves purging it "from" a person or object, as in יָרָכָּרָ וֹשׁ אָיָ יָיָרָאָל הַמַשָּמָאָת בְּוַי יִשְׁרָאָל וֹבוֹ וֹשָ , "and he will clear the purification candidate of (from) his impurity" (Lev 14:19), and אָיָל הַמַשְּמָאַת בְּוַ יִשְׁרָאָל וֹם אַרָּאָלוֹם מָשַרָּאָלוֹם הַשָּמָאָר וֹשָרָא Israel" (16:19).<sup>83</sup>

Because impure forces are seen as agents of disease and death, purity becomes associated with life. This includes cult sites, as a Babylonian text describes: "That man at a lucky shrine... a pure dwelling, the abode of life..."<sup>84</sup> The dwelling of the immortal gods must be pure, deathly forces kept away. Thus, on one side are gods, purity, and life, and on the other are demons, impurity, and death. Human beings possess life but are mortal and susceptible to demons, whose presence can hasten death. Therefore, people must strive to be pure in order to maximize life. As we will see ahead, the language, ingredients, themes, and procedures of P's purification program carry a leitmotif of "life."

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>82</sup> Utukki Limnûti, Tablet III; R. C. Thompson, Devils and Evil Spirits, p. 11.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>83</sup> The prefix (= ) is privative; see R. Gane, *Cult and Character*, p. 116.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>84</sup> Utukki Limnûti, Tablet "F"; R. C. Thompson, Devils and Evil Spirits, p. 173.

To purify a person is both to expel the impure force and to counter its deathly effects, replenishing and making the individual whole once again. Such an interpretation of purification resonates with Douglas, who characterizes purification as restoration of wholeness,<sup>85</sup> as well as Milgrom, who acknowledges the life-symbolism of purification rites.<sup>86</sup> However, P's impurity, I would contend, is not merely "symbolic" of death but is understood to be a tangible, dark force. Against this backdrop, purification according to P is not just a symbolic measure but has concrete effects,<sup>87</sup> life serving to banish death and replenish from its effects.

### 3.2.1 Classes of Purification

P's purification procedures can be grouped into several classes:

*Life-infusing rites* — These include the use of מִיָם חַיִּים (lit. "living water"), blood (the life-force), and other ingredients of vital potency. Such rites are reserved for the most severe forms of impurity, i.e., those with "residual" impurity lasting for a week after contact with the source of impurity. Apart from the יָּרָם מָיָם מָיָם מַיָּים מַיָּים מַיָּים מַיָּים מַרָּיָם מַרָיָם מַרָּיָם מון זענים אַרָּיָם מַרָּיָם מַרָּיָם מַרָּיָם מַרָּיָם מַרָּיָם מַרָּיָם מַרָּיָם מַרָים מון גענים מון זענים מון נוּנים אַרָּים מוּר (see Chs. 8, 10).

*Refreshing and cleansing rites* — These include washing with water, laundering clothes, and shaving the body or head. While washing and laundering are typically characterized as purgative rites, as we will see, they also act to refresh and renew, and as such are geared toward readmission to public and family life (see Chs. 5–6). Whole-body shaving is limited to cases of skin צָרַעָת and Levite purification. These, I would argue, are purgative

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>85</sup> See M. Douglas, *Purity and Danger*, pp. 46–57, 124; *idem*, "Atonement in Leviticus," pp. 120–123.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>86</sup> Milgrom states regarding מַיָּכִם חַיָּרָם , "Since impurity is symbolic of death, its antidote, appropriately, is that which gives life" (J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 924; see also ibid., p. 832, regarding מְצֹרֶע purification). <sup>87</sup> See R. Gane, *Cult and Character*, pp. 7–8.

measures, designed to remove a locus of impurity. Shaving the head is done in the case of a nazirite who inadvertently becomes impure, the purpose being disposal of a desecrated sanctum, and possibly removal of the impurity (see Ch. 7).

*Auspicious time intervals* — These include evening, the third day, seven/fourteen days, the eighth day, and forty/eighty days. As we will discuss, these are typological numbers used in the Bible and ancient Near East to express ideas of completion, fullness, and regeneration (see Ch. 4).

*Sacrifices* — Sacrificial offerings are prescribed as the final rite of purification for several cases: childbirth, skin צָרְעָת, abnormal genital flux, and the impure nazirite. We will see, however, that sacrifice differs from other classes of purification, being intended not to replenish people or purge their impurity but to clear them of liability with respect to YHWH, a function indicated by the verb כָּפָר (see Ch. 9).

Purification Class	Rite/Procedure	Impurity Case	Verses	
Life-infusing rites	Washing with מַיִם חַיִּים	Abnormal genital discharge (m)	Lev 15:13	
	Sprinkling with מַיָם חַיָּיִם/ blood-based formulas	Skin/house צְרַעַת	Lev 14:7, 51	
		Corpse contamination	Num 19:18–19	
		Levite purification	Num 8:7	
	Daubing with blood and oil	Skin אָרַעַת	Lev 14:14, 17, 25, 28	
	Sprinkling with blood	Sancta	e.g., Lev 4, 16	
Refreshing and cleansing rites	Washing	Skin אָרַעַת	14:8–9	
		Corpse contamination	Num 19:19	
		Most one-day impurities	e.g., Lev 15, 16; Num 19	
	Laundering	Skin אָרַעַת	Lev 14:8–9	
		Corpse contamination	Num 19:19	

Purification Class	Rite/Procedure	Impurity Case	Verses		
Refreshing and cleansing rites (cont.)	Laundering (cont.)	Abnormal genital discharge (m)	Num 15:13		
		Levite purification	Num 8:7		
		Most one-day impurities	e.g., Lev 11, 15, 16; Num 19		
	Shaving/haircutting	Skin אָרַעַת	Lev 14:8–9		
		Levite purification	Num 8:7		
		Contaminated nazirite	Num 6:9		
Auspicious time intervals	Evening	One-day impurities	e.g., Lev 11, 15; Num 19		
		Corpse contamination (after 7 days)	Num 19:19		
	3 days	Corpse contamination	Num 19:12, 19		
	7 days (x2)	Skin אָרַעַת	Lev 14:8		
		Corpse contamination	Num 19:11, 14, 16		
		Abnormal genital discharge (m/f)	Lev 15:13, 28		
	7 days (x2)	Menstruation	Lev 15:19		
		Childbirth: initial period	Lev 12:2, 5		
	8th day	Skin צָרַעַת	Lev 14:10, 14, 23, 29		
		Abnormal genital discharge (m)	Lev 15:14, 29		
	40 days (x2)	Childbirth: total	Lev 12:4–5 (implied)		
Sacrifices	offerings חַשָּאת and עֹלָה	Skin צָרַעַת	Lev 14:15, 19, 22, 31		
		Childbirth	Lev 12:6, 8		
		Abnormal genital discharge (m/f)	Lev 15:15, 30		
		Contaminated nazirite	Num 6:11		
	אָשָׁם offering	Skin אָרַעַת	Lev 14:12–14		
		Contaminated nazirite	Num 6:12		

## 3.2.2 Sequence of Purification

In addition to the elements of purification, there is significance to the order in which they are performed.

	Heal/Cease	Wait (# days)	Sprinkle	Shave	Launder	Wash	Sacrifice/Daub	Evening
Animal carcass					1	2		3
Corpse contamination		1	2		3	4		5 <sup>88</sup>
Red cow					1	2		3
Childbirth		1					2	
Discharge (male)	1	2			3	4	5	
Discharge (female)	1	2					3	
Seminal emission						1		2
Menstruation		1						
Skin אָרַעַת	1	3	2	4 <sup>89</sup>	5	6	7	

Table 4. Sequence of purification rites by case

Several observations: (1) Even though different elements are prescribed across cases, they nearly always occur in the same sequence. (2) Healing or cessation of flow always precedes any active purification rites. I would argue that healing is a part of the purification procedure, albeit owing to a natural process rather than a rite.<sup>90</sup> (3) When sacrifices are prescribed, they are the final rite in the purification process. (4) When waiting until evening

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>88</sup> The requirement to launder, wash, and wait until evening after corpse contamination may stem from contact with the אמי נדָה/red cow mixture rather than from corpse contamination (see Sec. 8.6.2).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>89</sup> Shaving, laundering, and bathing are prescribed twice for the מִעֹרָע. Before waiting seven days, the sequence is launder, shave, and wash (Lev 14:8); after the seven days: shave, launder, and wash (14:9).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>90</sup> See Sec. 4.7.1. This is contra Milgrom, who argues that the person "undergoes purification only after he is cured" (J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 43).

is prescribed, this is the final stage of purification. (5) For cases of residual impurity (corpse contamination, abnormal genital discharge, and skin (צָרְעָת), laundering and washing take place at the end of the waiting period, not at the beginning.<sup>91</sup> This indicates that their purpose is not to wash off impure substances (which would be done at the outset of the waiting period) but rather (a) to purge an intangible impure force, and (b) to help restore, replenish, and renew, as the person is reintroduced into society and everyday life.

#### In sum

P's conception of impurity as a deathly force is rooted in ancient beliefs about impurity as a demonic, underworldly presence. Purification in P consistently expresses the leitmotif of life. The goal in purification is both the expulsion of the deathly force of impurity as well as replenishment and revitalization of the purification candidate. The two acts are simultaneous: As life is reintroduced, so are the forces of death banished. Textual data in support of this hypothesis can be found in the language and components of P's purification procedures, which will be the primary focus of this study. We will begin our analysis with auspicious time intervals, continue to the purgative/refreshing rites of washing, laundering, and shaving, and then examine the use of special life-infusing formulas and substances.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>91</sup> In the case of skin אָרְעָת, where laundering and washing (plus shaving) are carried out twice, before and after the seven-day waiting period, I would argue that each set marks the end of a stage of purification. The first set concludes the period of banishment from the camp and serves as a rite of reentry, while the second set concludes the period outside the tent and signals full readmission.

# 4. Passage of Time

One element common to nearly every case of purification in P is a prescribed waiting period.<sup>92</sup> In some cases, there is an empirical or physiological component to allowing time to pass, as in waiting for the healing of צָרַעָת or for the cessation of an abnormal genital discharge, or seven days covering the maximum duration of normal menstrual bleeding.<sup>93</sup> In most cases, however, the duration is a typological number, a symbolic time marker that reflects the severity of the impurity. There is also a distinction between time used to attain purification versus time used as a conditional inspection period to determine whether impurity exists, the latter of which applies only in cases of y cases.

That "time heals" is a part of lived experience. Alongside this natural healing and rehabilitation process is the belief that specific intervals of time have auspicious potency. Each time marker has its own character and associations.

# 4.1 Until Evening (One Day)

Impurity until evening (indicated primarily by אַד הָעָרָב but also by other phrases, e.g., וּבָא הַשֶּׁמֶשׁ וְטָהֵר) is mentioned dozens of times in priestly texts and once in Deuteronomy (23:12). The onset of evening as a time of purification is explicit in the following cases:

- *Animal carcasses* One who touches, carries, or eats a non-permitted carcass (Lev 11:24–31, 39–40; 17:15; 22:5–6).
- *House צָרַעָת* One who enters a quarantined house (Lev 14:46).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>92</sup> One exception is sanctuary impurity, whose purification does not call for waiting periods. The reason is that sanctuary impurity is cumulative rather than relating to a specific instance of contagion (see Sec. 1.3).
<sup>93</sup> Modern estimates put the typical duration of menstrual bleeding between two and eight days, with the average being four to six days; see B. G. Reed and B. R. Carr, "The Normal Menstrual Cycle." Seven days thus covers the duration of bleeding for most women.

- Abnormal genital discharges One who touches the bedding of a יָב/יָבָה, who sits on, touches, or carries something they sat on (Lev 15:5–6, 9–10, 26–27), who touches or is spat on by a יַב (vv. 7–8), or who is touched by a יַב who has not washed his hands (v. 11).
- Seminal emission A man who has a nocturnal emission (Lev 15:16; cf. Deut 23:11–12), cloth or leather onto which semen has fallen (Lev 15:17), or a man and woman who have sexual intercourse (v. 18).
- *Menstruation* One who touches a woman during menstruation, or who touches her bedding or something she sat on (Lev 15:19–23).
- *Red cow/corpse contamination* One who prepares the red cow ashes (Num 19:7– 9), who sprinkles or touches the מֵי נָדָה (v. 21), who touches or is touched by a corpsecontaminated person (v. 22), and a corpse-contaminated person on the seventh day of purification (v. 19).

A one-day impurity does not mean completing a twenty-four-hour day. Impurity ends at the onset of evening, whether the person was impure the entire day or only shortly before evening. The "until evening" time frame typically indicates the mildest form of impurity a person can contract.<sup>94</sup> One exception may be corpse contamination, where the seven days of purification conclude in the evening (Num 19:19). However, this requirement may owe to a separate impurity—having been sprinkled with the  $\eta$ ; (see Sec. 8.6.2).

### 4.1.1 Evening as a Delineation Between Days

Why does impurity cease in the evening, as opposed to the next morning? One possibility is that evening is thought to mark the beginning of a new day. Rabbinic Judaism

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>94</sup> See, however, Ch. 1, note 6, regarding the severity of seminal emission versus menstruation.

holds such a view, and some scholars trace this conception back to ancient Israel.<sup>95</sup> Two festivals are in fact said in priestly literature to begin at sunset: Passover (בִּיְרָבָּיָם, Lev 23:5) and the Day of Atonement (בִּיֶרֶב מֵיֶרֶב מֵיֶרֶב מֵיֶרֶב מֵיֶרָב מֵיֶרָב מֵיֶרָב understand the biblical day as beginning in the morning. Possible indications in priestly writings include the morning עֹלָה offering mentioned before the evening offering (Lev 6:13; Num 28:4) and the stipulation that sacrificial meat not be left until morning (Exod 12:10, 16:19–20, 29:34; Lev 7:15, 22:30).<sup>96</sup> References to festivals beginning at night might then be deemed exceptions to the rule<sup>97</sup> or later additions to the text.<sup>98</sup> Marking the end of one day and the start of a new one would be one rationale for designating evening as an auspicious time for purification.

Another conception of the biblical day is that overnight hours constitute a period of down-time intervening between one day and the next.<sup>99</sup> Thus, a day ends in the evening, but the new one begins only the next morning. William Propp suggests that perhaps two demarcations of a day are used simultaneously: Just as there are two new years—a solar new year in the spring and a lunar new year in the autumn, Israel maintains both a solar, dawn-to-dawn day (like Egypt) as well as a lunar, dusk-to-dusk day (like Mesopotamia).<sup>100</sup> According to these views, we are left with the question as to why evening, not morning, is chosen as the purification interval.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>95</sup> See e.g., J. E. Hartley, *Leviticus*, "The Concept of Clean and Unclean" (11:1-15:33); J. A. McGuire, "Evening or Morning: When Does the Biblical Day Begin?" pp. 201–214.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>96</sup> For an alternative interpretation, see J. Grossman, *The Sacrificial Service*, pp. 500–508.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>97</sup> See J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 23–27*, p. 1967.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>98</sup> See e.g., J. Morgenstern, "Calendars of Ancient Israel," p. 16.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>99</sup> See J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 844. Propp understands similarly, see W. H. Propp, *Exodus 1–18*, pp. 391–392.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>100</sup> See ibid.

### 4.1.2 Primordial and Regenerative Darkness

A different approach is to look at biblical conceptions of nightfall. The dark of night is described as covering and concealing, as in: אָדָ מְשֶׁרְ יָשְׁנְצָי וְלָיָלָה אוֹר בַּעֲדַנִי (Surely darkness will conceal me, night will provide me with cover" (Ps 139:11). Covering as a metaphor for forgiving/nullifying sin is also attested in Psalms (Ps 32:1, 5; 85:3). Evening could thus work to cover over and effectively nullify impurity.<sup>101</sup> Additionally for P, darkness coupled with water makes up the womb-like, primordial state of the world, prefiguring creation.<sup>102</sup> The onset of evening represents the beginning stage of re-creation, the gestation period leading to rebirth the following day. This picture is reflected in other ancient cultures: Enuma Elish describes the primeval darkness and watery chaos that fill the universe prior to creation.<sup>103</sup> Indian cosmology in the Rigveda likewise says, "At first there was only darkness wrapped in darkness" and everything "was only unillumined water."<sup>104</sup> The Egyptian god Atum, who represents completion and is born of darkness and the watery abyss,<sup>105</sup> is thought to represent evening.<sup>106</sup>

So, in addition to representing the end of the active day or the beginning of a new day, evening may serve as a time of purification both because it "covers" (and therefore neutralizes) impurity and because it is conceived as a connection to the primordial state of creation, signifying the beginning of regeneration and rebirth—a life motif.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>101</sup> The verb כָּפֵר can also connote "cover"; see Sec. 9.3.1.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>102</sup> See R. A. Oden, Jr., "Cosmogony, Cosmology"; see also J. D. Levinson, "Genesis," p. 13.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>103</sup> See S. Bertman, *Handbook to Life in Ancient Mesopotamia*, p. 312.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>104</sup> See R. A. Oden, Jr., "Cosmogony, Cosmology."

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>105</sup> See G. Pinch, *Egyptian Mythology*, pp. 63–64.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>106</sup> E.g., "I am Khepri in the morning, Re at noon, and Atum who is in the evening" (*ANET 3*, p. 13). Kaufmann points out that the primordial realm "is conceived of variously—as darkness, water, spirit, earth, sky, and so forth" and suggests that in pagan religion, this realm preexists and gives birth to the gods; see Y. Kaufmann, *The Religion of Israel*, pp. 21–22.

# 4.2 Third Day

The next longest interval of time for purification is three days. There is one example in P of purification performed on the third day:

 Corpse contamination — A corpse-contaminated person is sprinkled with מֵי נְדָה on the third day, and once again on the seventh day (Num 19:12, 19; 31:19).

Sprinkling מי נְדָה on the final day of purification makes intuitive sense, but if there needs to be an initial sprinkling beforehand (the reason for sprinkling twice being a question in itself<sup>107</sup>), why does P choose the third day?

### 4.2.1 Three Days as a Preexisting Purification Period

There is an additional example of a "third day" in a non-P text being significant for purification purposes. Leading up to the Sinai theophany, the people are told to purify themselves for two days to prepare for the third day: אָקִים הַשְּׁלִישִׁי, "Let them be ready for the third day" (Exod 19:11). Moses further instructs the people: הָמִים אַל תִּגְּשׁׁוּ אֶל אִשָּׁה הֶיוּ נְכֹנִים לְשָׁלֹשֶׁת Se ready for the third day: do not go near a woman" (v. 15).<sup>108</sup> Propp explains that this may reflect an older, three-day purification period for males.<sup>109</sup> In addition, the Qumran sectarians write of a three-day purification period following seminal emission prior to entering the Temple City, with laundering and bathing done on the first and third

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>107</sup> We will not explore the question here, but one suggestion is that a two-stage process recapitulates cosmic destruction and renewal, where the third and seventh days track P's creation narrative. See J. R. Humann, *Ceremony of the Red Heifer*, pp. 243–245.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>108</sup> NJPS translates both שָׁלשֶׁת יָמִים and שְׁלשֶׁת יָמִים as "the third day," but the latter more literally means "three days." These verses are attributed to J; see R. E. Friedman, *Bible with Sources Revealed*, p. 152; W. H. Propp, *Exodus 19–40*, p. 143.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>109</sup> See W. H. Propp, *Exodus 19–40*, p. 162.

days.<sup>110</sup> Sprinkling on the third day in P might then be based on a preexisting, standalone tradition of a three-day purification period.

### 4.2.2 A Unit of Time Less Than a Week

A three-day span may serve as a standard biblical unit to signify a duration that is more than a day but less than a week.<sup>111</sup> Apart from purification, a three-day period is attested numerous times in the Pentateuch, used to convey the duration of a sizable journey,<sup>112</sup> a fair number of days to put between two parties,<sup>113</sup> and a significant amount of time passing.<sup>114</sup> Other durations between one and seven days lack a similar biblical precedent. Two days is used only infrequently<sup>115</sup> and is not a duration used for any cultic purposes. A fourth or fifth day occur only within a larger sequence of numbers, as in the days of creation (Gen 1) or the offerings of the tribal chieftains (Num 7, 29). Six days occurs only as the leadup to a seventh day (mainly prior to the Sabbath). Three days is thus the biblical go-to number to convey a significant number of days that is less than a week, and close to the halfway point. It is also the minimum number indicating plurality, as opposed to duality, according to Biblical Hebrew grammar.<sup>116</sup>

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>110</sup> See J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 929.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>111</sup> See W. H. Propp, *Exodus 1–18*, p. 206.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>112</sup> E.g., Abraham's three-day trek to Mount Moriah (Gen 2:25), Moses' proposed three-day pilgrimage in the desert (Exod 3:18, 5:3, 8:23), and the journey in the wilderness of Etham (Num 33:8).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>113</sup> E.g., Jacob's escape from Laban (Gen 30:26) and the ark scouting out a resting place (Num 10:33).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>114</sup> E.g., the number of days Joseph keeps his brothers locked up (Gen 42:17), the duration of the plague of darkness (Exod 10:22), and the time when a גָרַח שְׁלָמִים is considered spoiled and must be burned (Lev 7:17, 19:6).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>115</sup> The term שְׁנֵי הַיָּמִים is used only regarding Purim (Esth 9:27); יוֹמָיִם is used regarding the manna (Exod 16:29), injury to a slave (Exod 21:21), and eating quail (Num 11:19).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>116</sup> The dual and plural forms have their own endings, such that יומים means "two days" and ימים means "days," i.e., three or more (Raanan Eichler, personal communication).

#### 4.2.3 Magical Completion

The number three also holds typological significance, with sets of three having a magical value representing completion.<sup>117</sup> Examples include the triple invocation of קדוֹשׁ קָדוֹשׁ (Isa 6:3), the thrice-yearly pilgrimage, שָׁלָשׁ פְּעָמִים בַּשָׁנָה (Exod 23:17, 34:23–24, Deut 16:16), the three times (שָׁלָשׁ פְּעָמִים) Balaam blesses Israel instead of cursing it (Num 24:10),<sup>118</sup> and the patriarchal trio of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob (including mentions in priestly texts: Exod 2:24; 6:3, 8; Lev 26:42). Three as a number with magical properties may also feature in P's cultic rites, such as the three ingredients cedar wood, crimson thread, and hyssop used in purification,<sup>119</sup> as well as the three-fold priestly blessing (Num 6:24–26).<sup>120</sup>

Day three of the seven-day period is thus likely chosen for several reasons: it has precedents in ancient purification rites, is a frequently used biblical duration, a plurality positioned roughly halfway between the first and seventh days, and is an auspicious number conveying wholeness and completion, a fitting pitstop on the way to full purification.

# 4.3 Seven Days / Seventh Day

The next significant time interval for purification is seven days, and similarly the seventh day of a seven-day period. A seven-day duration is indicated in the following cases:

- *Childbirth* A woman has the status of נְדָה following the birth of a boy (Lev 12:2).
- Skin מְצֹרָע A מְצֹרָע, after the outbreak heals, remains outside the tent (Lev 14:8), and a suspected מְצֹרַע is quarantined (Lev 13:4–5, 21, 26).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>117</sup> See W. Smith, *Dictionary of the Bible*, p. 743.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>118</sup> Also, the three times (שָׁלשׁ רְגָלִים) Balaam strikes his donkey before YHWH opens the donkey's eyes.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>119</sup> See Secs. 8.1–3.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>120</sup> See M. S. Terry, *Biblical Hermeneutics*, p. 289.

- Abnormal genital discharges A גָבענָבָה, after the discharge has ceased (Lev 15:13, 28).
- *Menstruation* A menstruating woman (Lev 15:19), or a man who has sexual intercourse with a menstruating woman (v. 24).
- *Corpse contamination* One who touches a human corpse (Num 19:11, 31:19), all those in the tent where a person has died (19:14), or one who touches a human bone or grave (v. 16).

These are all examples of seven days as the duration of impurity or quarantine. There are also rites performed on the seventh day itself:

- Skin מְצֹרְעָת A מְצֹרְעָת shaves, launders, and bathes (Lev 14:9), and the priest conducts an inspection during the initial quarantine (Lev 13:5, 6, 27, 32).
- *House אָרַעַת* The priest inspects the quarantined house (Lev 14:39).
- *Nazirite* —An impure nazirite shaves his/her head (Num 6:9).
- Corpse contamination A corpse-contaminated person is sprinkled with מֵי נַדָּה launders, and bathes (Num 19:12, 19; 31:19, 31:24).

### 4.3.1 Prevalence of the Number Seven

P texts are replete with the number seven, including the number of days the priests must stay in the Tent of Meeting during consecration (Lev 8:33, 35), the sanctuary lampstand with seven lamps (Exod 37:23; Num 8:2), and sprinkling of various substances done in sets of seven:

- Blood, toward the פָרֹכֶת (Lev 4:6, 17);
- Blood, toward the <u>כפ</u>רת (Lev 16:14);

- Blood, on the altar (Lev 16:19);
- Blood, toward the Tent of Meeting (Num 19:4);
- Anointing oil, on the altar (Lev 8:11);
- Oil, "before YHWH" (Lev 14:16);
- The water-blood mixture, on the מִצֹרָע (Lev 14:7).

Additionally, Num 28–29 prescribes the sacrifice of seven lambs on the first of each month, the first day of the Unleavened Bread festival, the first-of-the-seventh-month festival (יוֹם תְּרוּצָה), and the Day of Atonement. The Pentateuch opens with P describing seven days of creation (Gen 1:1–2:2), which by extension includes the concept of the Sabbath as the seventh day of the week. The pattern pervades H texts as well. There are two seven-day festivals, Unleavened Bread and Ingathering (Lev 23:6, 34), seven weeks of counting toward the Feast of Weeks (23:15, cf. Deut 16:9), seven sets of seven years before the Jubilee (Lev 25:8), and multiple festivals held in the seventh month (23:23, 27, 34).

Also in H, a calf/ewe must be with its mother for seven days (Lev 22:27, cf. Exod 22:29), and if Israel does not listen to YHWH, it will be punished sevenfold for its sins (Lev 26:18, 21). Literary techniques also highlight the number seven in priestly writings, e.g., with Numbers 19 containing seven subjects mentioned seven times,<sup>121</sup> and H using seven instances of a word in a pericope.<sup>122</sup>

#### 4.3.2 Abundance, Fruitfulness, and Perfection

One typological characteristic of the number seven in the Bible is abundance and fruitfulness. Several instances of seven children, daughters, and wives in the Bible and

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>121</sup> See J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 1039.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>122</sup> See J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 17–22*, pp. 1323–1324.

apocrypha,<sup>123</sup> as well as in Canaanite/Ugaritic literature, point to the number being associated with matrimony and procreation.<sup>124</sup> Examples are also found in the ancient Near East of the number seven symbolizing innumerability or totality, such as the seven-story ziggurat of Uruk and the Babylonian-Assyrian "seven gods"<sup>125</sup> representing all known and unknown gods.<sup>126</sup> Erhard Gerstenberger describes the number seven in priestly texts as a sacred number indicating perfection or completion.<sup>127</sup> Cycles of seven days, weeks, years, and sets of years comprise a principle of sacred order in P, including the creation narrative.<sup>128</sup> Milton Terry suggests that, being the sum of four and three—four being the spatial directions representing the world, and three representing the divine aspect of wholeness and completion—the number seven may also symbolize a union between creation and divine creator.<sup>129</sup>

### 4.3.3 Magical and Foreboding Number Seven

Sprinkling in sets of seven, prescribed by P, may be thought to have magical potency, with sevenfold action cited elsewhere in the Bible for its efficacy. This includes Naaman bathing seven times in the Jordan (2 Kgs 5:10, 14), Elijah ordering his servant to scan the skies seven times for signs of rain (1 Kgs 18:43), and Joshua's army—together with seven priests carrying seven ram's horns—encircling Jericho for seven days, and seven times on the seventh day (Josh 6).

The biblical number seven also conveys a sense of foreboding. The sevenfold curses of Lev 26:18 indicate a magical capacity for threat.<sup>130</sup> A sevenfold punishment awaits anyone who kills Cain (Gen 4:15), with the punishment for killing Lamech being seventy-

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>123</sup> See 1 Sam 2:5; Jer 15:9; Job 1:2, 42:13; Ruth 4:15; 2 Macc 7.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>124</sup> See W. H. Propp, *Exodus 1–18*, p. 121.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>125</sup> An assembly of seven gods reside in the underworld and "decree the fates"; see S. N. Kramer, *The Sumerians*, pp. 115–131.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>126</sup> See J. Freiberg, "Numbers and Counting."

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>127</sup> See E. Gerstenberger, *Leviticus*, "Concluding Regulations" (22:26–33).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>128</sup> See ibid., "The Institution of the Year of Release" (25:8-12).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>129</sup> See M. S. Terry, *Biblical Hermeneutics*, p. 290.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>130</sup> See J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 2308.

sevenfold (Gen 4:24). Pharaoh's dream oracle is interpreted as seven years of abundance followed by seven years of famine (Gen 41:53). The magical significance of the number seven may also be linked linguistically to שָׁבֻעָ, an oath, whereby the word גִּשְׁבַע, "swear an oath," connotes "be-seven oneself."<sup>131</sup>

### 4.3.4 Regeneration and Filling

For P, seven days represent a full creative cycle, wherein the world becomes increasingly filled with life on each day. The seven days of priestly consecration can also be understood as a gradual increase in sanctity over the course of the week. According to Propp:

Not only space but also time can possess graduated Holiness. Throughout the week of Filling, the sanctity levels of both priesthood and Altar rise. Each day, the sacrifices, offered by the nonpriest Moses upon an unconsecrated Altar... are more efficacious. Finally on the eighth day, Aaron is sufficiently holy to take over, and the Altar is sufficiently holy to attract and sustain Yahweh's fire.<sup>132</sup>

Note that Propp translates the word מְלָאִים as "filling" but understands this term (as well as the phrase ומִלָּאָת אָת יָדָם, Exod 28:41) idiomatically, "connoting a divine commissioning, a transfer of authority from a god to a sacred human."<sup>133</sup> Milgrom points to a parallel idiom in Akkadian, referring to a scepter of authority being placed into Adad-Nirari's hands.<sup>134</sup>

I would argue, however, that even as an idiom, the term מַלָּאִים does not lose its basic meaning of "filling." P uses the verb מְלֵא in other contexts speaking of investiture of YHWH's presence, such as endowing people with divine wisdom or spirit, וְאַתָּר מְלֵב חָכְמֵי לֵב אָשֶׁר מְלָא תִיו רוּחַ חָכָמָה (Exod 28:3; see also 31:3; 35:31, 35), and the glory of YHWH filling the Tabernacle, אָת הַמִּשְׁכָן

 <sup>&</sup>lt;sup>131</sup> E. Gerstenberger, *Leviticus*, "Faulty Existence" (26:14-33). This may be connected to the "seven demons" of oaths from Babylonian-Assyrian magical rites; see W. C. Wood, "The Religion of Canaan," pp. 51–52, 119.
 <sup>132</sup> W. H. Propp, *Exodus 19–40*, p. 532.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>133</sup> Ibid., p. 452.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>134</sup> See J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 539.

these cases. The term מְלָא used in priestly consecration can thus connote divine commission of the priests as well as their being filled with sanctity over the course of seven days. Seven days of graduated filling in the case of sanctity can also apply to week-long purification. During the seven-day period, the purification candidate becomes increasingly replenished, made whole once again following exposure to the deathly force of impurity.

The number seven used in purification is thus a magical, sacred number conveying abundance, fecundity, wholeness, power, regeneration, and fullness—all signs of life.

# 4.4 Eighth Day

In three cases, P prescribes eighth-day rites following a seven-day purification period:

- Skin מְצֹרְעָת A מְצֹרְעָת A מְצֹרְעָת offers two lambs (or one lamb and two birds), as well as flour mixed with oil (Lev 14:10, 23), and is daubed with blood and oil (Lev 14:10–18, 25–29).
- Abnormal genital discharges A זָב׳וָבָה offers two birds (Lev 15:14, 29).
- *Nazirite* An impure nazirite offers two birds and one lamb (Num 6:10–12).

Apart from purification cases, seven days followed by an eighth day is significant elsewhere in P and H: The seven-day consecration of the priests and tabernacle is capped by eighth-day inaugural proceedings (Lev 9:1; cf. Ezek 43:27). The seven days of the Ingathering feast are followed by an eighth day of assembly (Lev 23:36, 39; Num 29:35). Male circumcision takes place on the eighth day following the first week of life (Lev 12:3; Gen 17:12, 21:4). An ox, sheep, or goat becomes acceptable for sacrifice from the eighth day and onwards, following seven days with its mother (Lev 22:27; see also in E, Exod 22:29).

40

### 4.4.1 Eighth Day as a Rite of Dedication and Fulfillment

The significance of the priestly number eight, according to Milgrom, owes to its connection to the number seven, conceived as 7 + 1, with the number fifty, 7 x 7 + 1, serving as an "enhanced number eight."<sup>135</sup> He explains that although it is linked to seven, the number eight retains a different character, with seven referring to investiture and מְלָאִים (rites of preparation and filling) and eight relating to initiation and dedication (rites of first use).<sup>136</sup> Annemarie Schimmel describes the eighth day as constituting "a second beginning, on a higher level, the fulfillment of what the heptad had prepared and completed."<sup>137</sup> For all seven-day purification cycles in P, the eighth day marks a new beginning—even if it is implicit, lacking any specific rites. The cases of skin אָרָעָת אָרָעָת, pathological discharge, and impure nazirite, however, prescribe eighth-day sacrificial rites. As will be discussed ahead, these cases (plus childbirth) are distinct in that they involve a debt of gratitude to YHWH. Sacrifice functions to cover that debt and other forms of personal liability (see Ch. 9).

### 4.5 Two Weeks

There is one instance in P of two weeks as an a priori duration for purification:<sup>138</sup>

• *Childbirth* — A woman has the status of נְדָה following the birth of a girl (Lev 12:5).

The two weeks in this case have the sense of double-seven, twice the duration of initial יָדָה impurity prescribed following the birth of a boy (Lev 12:2). This is also seen in the double period of "purification blood" (דְמֵי טָהָרָה) days following for a girl—sixty-six days, as

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>135</sup> J. Milgrom, *Leviticus* 23–27, p. 1999. Thus, the 7 x 7 days of counting, plus a fiftieth day of grain offerings (Lev 23:15–16), may be thought of as an "enhanced" (or expanded) version of the seven days of the Ingathering feast plus an eighth day of assembly.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>136</sup> See J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 571.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>137</sup> A. Schimmel, *The Mystery of Numbers*, p. 158.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>138</sup> There are other examples of a two-week duration in the case of צָרַעָת, but it is prescribed only conditionally, as an additional seven days of quarantine (שָׁבְעָת יָמִים שָׁנִית). Lev 13:5, 33, 54).

opposed to thirty-three for a boy (vv. 4–5). Lev 12:5 contains the only instance of the word  $\psi_{\mu}$ , "two weeks," in the Bible—elsewhere, the duration is expressed as 7 x 2 days or fourteen days. Of the twenty-one instances of "fourteen" in the Pentateuch, all but two are in priestly texts, including the fourteen lambs sacrificed on each day of the Ingathering feast (Num 29), and the Passover sacrifice carried out on the fourteenth day of the month (Exod 12:6, 18; Lev 23:5; Num 9:3, 5, 11; 28:16). The two festivals falling out on the fifteenth day of the month, in addition to coinciding with the full moon, can be conceptualized as following two sets of seven days, the number fifteen having a similar role to the number eight, capping 7 x 2 rather than 7 x 1.

#### 4.5.1 Gender and Childbirth: Double Impurity as Double Loss

Why should the birth of a girl occasion twice the duration of impurity for the mother? One explanation is that it stems from ancient beliefs about human embryology and physiology. Rabbinic sources suggest that male fetuses are formed after forty days and females after eighty days, a belief also held in ancient Greece,<sup>139</sup> and similar distinctions were held regarding the length of postpartum recovery.<sup>140</sup> Wright and Jones argue that the disparity points to male dominance in ancient Israelite society,<sup>141</sup> while Douglas proposes that "reproducing a female is more significant than reproducing a male" and therefore requires a more significant recovery.<sup>142</sup>

I suggest an approach similar to that of Douglas. Recall that for P, only the mother is impure, not the newborn child.<sup>143</sup> Following a birth, the mother is left vulnerable, weakened,

 <sup>&</sup>lt;sup>139</sup> See m. *Niddah* 4:7 and Aristotle (*History of Animals* 7.3), both cited by J. Milgrom, *Leviticus* 1–16, p. 751.
 <sup>140</sup> See S. R. Driver, *Book of Leviticus*, p. 76. Milgrom cites Indian and Hittite traditions of a three-month period

of impurity following male births versus four months for females; see J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 750. <sup>141</sup> See D. P. Wright and R. N. Jones, "Discharge."

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>142</sup> See M. Douglas, "Atonement in Leviticus," p. 114 n. 19.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>143</sup> Cf. Hittite postpartum impurity rules, which consider both the mother and infant to be impure; see J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 750.

#### 4. Passage of Time

and deathly forces accrue where there is greater vulnerability.<sup>144</sup> Blood loss, pallor, fatigue, and postpartum depression confirm the belief that her vitality has been sapped by the presence of deathly forces. Furthermore, the mother has experienced the loss/departure of a life that was subsumed within her during pregnancy, a void seized upon by deathly forces. These forces subside over time with the mother's rehabilitation and gradual revitalization.

The double period of impurity after the birth of a girl indicates a greater void, greater vulnerability, and thus requires a longer recovery. Why precisely double? P is concerned with "bearing fruit and multiplying,"<sup>145</sup> and because a female has the unique capacity to multiply, I would suggest that she is viewed by P as possessing twice the life-potential. Therefore, the birth of a girl is reckoned as twice the loss for the mother and requires twice as much time for her to regenerate and become whole.

# 4.6 Thirty-Three Days / Forty Days

Multiples of thirty-three (and forty) days occur in one case of purification in P:

*Childbirth* — A new mother has thirty-three "purification blood" דְמֵי טָהָרָה days (after the first seven days, for a total of forty days) following the birth of a boy (Lev 12:2–4), and sixty-six days (after the first two weeks, for a total of eighty days) following the birth of a girl (v. 5).

The phrase בִּדְמֵי טָהֲרָה, literally "in the blood of becoming pure,"<sup>146</sup> refers to a stage of less severe impurity than the initial postpartum days. The discharge of blood may be characterized as "purifying" in the sense that it gradually restores the mother's reproductive

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>144</sup> See ibid., p. 528.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>145</sup> The language of אָרוּ וּרְבוּ is a recognized terminological distinction of P, which contains all twelve instances of the phrase; see R. E. Friedman, *Bible with Sources Revealed*, p. 9.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>146</sup> See B. J. Schwartz, "Leviticus," p. 233. Cf. the LXX translation "unclean blood" (αἵματι ἀκαθάρτω).

system to normal.<sup>147</sup> At the onset of this phase of purification, the restrictions of negative are lifted, but the mother is barred from contact with sancta until the completion of forty days (v. 4). This has a parallel in ancient Greece, where a woman would undergo purification rites forty days after giving birth and prior to that was not allowed to enter a temple.<sup>148</sup> The number forty is not mentioned explicitly in Lev 12, but P clearly has the number in mind when it prescribes thirty-three days following the initial seven.<sup>149</sup> The significance of sixty-six (and implied eighty) days following the birth of a girl is in the doubling, just as the two weeks of initial impurity for a girl is double that prescribed for a boy (see Sec. 4.5.1 for a discussion of the gender discrepancy).

#### 4.6.1 Surviving an Ordeal

Forty is a number attested abundantly in the Bible, including in P. The number is used to convey the successful completion of a full reign, as with David and Solomon, each of whom is said to have been king for forty years (1 Kgs 2:11, 11:42).<sup>150</sup> It is the period of adulthood, from twenty to sixty years (Lev 27:3), and is therefore the amount of time deemed sufficient for an entire generation of adults to die off (Num 14:33).<sup>151</sup> Forty can also represent judgment, punishment, or trial,<sup>152</sup> e.g., the days of flood (Gen 7), the years wandering the wilderness (Num 14:34), the days of Moses' fast (Exod 24:28), and the number of lashes to dole out and not exceed (Deut 25:3).<sup>153</sup>

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>147</sup> See J. G. Murphy, *Book of Leviticus*, p. 158. Some speculate that the status of דְמֵי טְהָרָה corresponds to changes in blood flow, either a reduction in quantity (see E. Gerstenberger, *Leviticus*, "Purification" [12:1–8]) or a change in color, from bright red to brown (see G. J. Wenham, *Leviticus*, "Uncleanness after Childbirth" [12:1–8]). <sup>148</sup> See J. Milgrom, *Leviticus* 1–16, p. 750.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>149</sup> Schwartz notes, "The number thirty-three, which has no significance, when combined with the first seven days yields forty, a 'round' number of purification days" (B. J. Schwartz, "Leviticus," p. 233).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>150</sup> See M. Cogan, *1 Kings*, comment on 11:42. David's reign incidentally contains the only other instance of thirty-three in the Bible, the number of years he reigned in Jerusalem (2 Sam 5:4–5; 1 Chron 3:4)—which, when added to the seven years (and six months) he reigned in Hebron, yields forty.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>151</sup> See W. H. Propp, *Exodus 1–18*, p. 283.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>152</sup> See M. Terry, *Biblical Hermeneutics*, p. 293.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>153</sup> Cf. Middle Assyrian Laws, 18, "they shall flog that seignior forty [times] with staves" (ANET 3, p. 181).

In the case of childbirth, the number forty represents the completion of a dangerous, life-threatening ordeal.<sup>154</sup> The number seven, signifying regeneration, coupled with forty, signifying survival and purification by way of trial, are consistent with P's leitmotif of life and replenishment, the victory of life over the forces of death.

## 4.7 Indeterminate Time

Two cases in P involve indeterminate time, i.e., impurity so long as symptoms continue to manifest:

- Skin כָּל יְמֵי אֲשֶׁר הַגַּגַע בּוֹ יִטְמָא As long as the lesion persists (כָּל יְמֵי אֲשֶׁר הַגַּגַע בּוֹ יִטְמָא). Lev 13:46).

The reason that these are the only two cases with indeterminate times is that every other instance of impurity has either a duration linked to a typological/magical number or an empirical duration with a predictable biological terminus, such as menstruation (the seven days also being typological). Pathological genital discharges are irregular, so P cannot assign fixed times for purification. With skin גָּרַעָת, it is conceivable that a person can be a מְעֹרָע in perpetuity. Uzziah, for instance, is said to have been buried as a מְעֹרָע (2 Chr 26:23).

### 4.7.1 Healing as Part of Purification

Following the empirical healing of אָרַעַת or an abnormal genital discharge, a 7 + 1 purification period is prescribed. Milgrom argues that the healing stage is not a part of purification: "Purification is neither healing nor theurgy. The afflicted person undergoes

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>154</sup> See J. E. Hartley, *Leviticus*, comments on Lev 12:4–5.

purification only after he is cured."<sup>155</sup> However, there are verses in P that indicate otherwise, where healing is said to render the person pure. Regarding skin אָרָעַת, the text states: יְרָפָּא יָרְפָּא יָסְהוֹר הוּא וְטָהֲרוֹ הַכֹּהֵן (The scall is healed; he is clean. The priest shall pronounce him clean" (Lev 13:37). Regarding genital discharges, it states: וְכָּי יִטְהַר הַזָּב מְזּוֹבוֹ (Lev 13:37). Regarding genital discharges, it states: וְכָי יִטְהַר הַזָּב מְזּוֹבוֹ (Lev 13:37), יְרָס מְזּוֹבָה מְזּוֹבָה מְזּוֹבָה מָזּוֹבָה יָשָׁהָר הַזָּב מְזּוֹבוֹ (Lev 15:13), and הָאָם טְהַרָה מְזּוֹבָה מָזּוֹבָה יָשָׁהָר מַזּוֹבָה she becomes clean of her discharge" (v. 28).

Milgrom's solution is to say that P employs two different uses of the verb ע.ה.ר, one implying ritual purification, and the other physical healing. As such, he translates ע.ה.ר in Lev 15:13, 28 as "healed of his/her discharge," explaining, "Here the word *tāhar* denotes physical, not ritual, purification."<sup>156</sup> It seems to me, however, that such a definition of ע.ה.ר betrays the simple reading of the verses, and that healing is understood in P as part of the purification process, albeit natural and preceding P's purificatory rites.

#### In sum

P's time intervals for purification each have their own character and significance: Evening marks the end of the lived day (if not the official day), and darkness may serve to cover/neutralize impurity as well as signal the beginning of primordial regeneration and renewal. The third day constitutes a minor completion, a plurality of days less than a week that provides a milestone of wholeness on the road to full purification. Seven days is a period that predominates in priestly texts, characterized by magical efficacy, a time of graduated filling, a week-long creative cycle signaling regeneration. The eighth day caps the seven-day purification cycle and marks the renewal of life as a pure individual, in some cases involving sacrificial rites. Forty days indicates survival and purification following a period of

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>155</sup> J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 43.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>156</sup> Ibid., p. 921; see also p. 944. Feder also posits a similar dual meaning for the term יָּעָהוֹר; see Y. Feder, *"Tum'ah*: Ritual Impurity or Fear of Contagious Disease?"

tribulation. Thus, even before discussing rites of purification, we find that the temporal foundation of purification in P is replete with the leitmotif of life and replenishment, a core component in countering the deathly effects of impurity.

# 5. Washing

In priestly purity legislation, people are explicitly directed to wash with water ((r,n,y)) in the following cases:

- *Skin* מִצְרָעָת A מְצֹרָע, on the first and seventh day of purification (Lev 14:8–9).
- Abnormal genital discharges A זָב, after counting seven days following cessation of the discharge (Lev 15:13), one who touches the bedding of a זָב/זָבָה, who touches or carries something they sat on (vv. 5–7, 26–27), who is spat on by a זָב (v. 8), or who is touched by a זָב who hasn't washed his hands (v. 11).
- *Seminal emission* A man who has a nocturnal emission (Lev 15:16), a man and woman who have sexual intercourse (v. 18), or a priest who ejaculates (22:4–6).
- *Menstruation* One who touches the bedding of a menstruating woman or an object on which she sat (Lev 15:21–22).
- Day of Atonement rites The person who dispatches the Azazel goat (Lev 16:26), or who burns the הַפָּאַת bull and goat outside the camp (vv. 27–28).
- Priests' consecration The priests, at the outset of their consecration, before being dressed (Exod 29:4, Lev 8:6).
- *Red cow/corpse contamination* A corpse-contaminated person on the seventh day (Num 19:19), the priest who throws the ingredients into the red cow fire (v. 7), the one who burns the red cow (v. 8), or a priest who touches a corpse-contaminated person (Lev 22:4–6).
- Secondary impurity A priest who touches anyone who is impure (Lev 22:5–6).

### 5.1 Implied Washing

There are some conspicuous omissions from the above list. For instance, Leviticus 11, which lists numerous cases of impurity until evening following contact with animal carcasses, makes no mention of a bathing requirement. Also, regarding a woman who gives birth (Lev 12), or who completes seven days of menstrual impurity (Lev 15:19–23), there is no explicit mention of washing. One approach is to take P's legislation at face value,<sup>157</sup> though others argue that washing is implicit in many cases.<sup>158</sup> For instance, washing is explicitly prescribed for a sput not for a spin, and it seems doubtful that the two should be different in this regard. There is also the case of Bathsheba who washes following what appears to be menstrual impurity, "she had just purified herself after her impurity" (2 Sam 11:2–4).<sup>159</sup> Would P not also expect washing following menstruation, and if so, why omit it?

Among the rationales for this omission is that it is a stylistic priestly shorthand technique wherein the reader is expected to fill in the blanks,<sup>160</sup> or that it applies a fortiori reasoning.<sup>161</sup> Another way to explain P's omission of washing following menstruation or childbirth is that the woman is assumed to have already washed herself throughout the time of bleeding for purposes of normal hygiene and cleanliness. Perhaps this suffices for P. This is as opposed to washing after seminal emission or sex, where people may not regard semen as so irksome as to necessitate washing; therefore, P legislates it. As for the נָבָה), washing is prescribed even though he likely performed a hygienic wash during

<sup>158</sup> Hayah Katz explains, "Since washing is prescribed for lesser, derivative forms of impurity... it is reasonable to suppose that it was part of the purification process in all instances" (H. Katz, "He Shall Bathe," p. 370). Says Milgrom, if laundering is required for carrying animal carcasses, "it is inconceivable that they are not also obliged to undergo ablutions" (J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 667). See also ibid., pp. 746, 924; D. P. Wright, *Disposal of Impurity*, p. 376; D. P. Wright and R. N. Jones, "Leprosy."

<sup>159</sup> See P. K. McCarter, *II Samuel*, comment on 11:4.

<sup>160</sup> See e.g., D. Ellens, "Leviticus 15: Contrasting Conceptual Associations Regarding Women," p. 141; Y. Feder, "The Purification of a Niddah: The Legal Responsibility of the Reader."

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>157</sup> See e.g., Z. Farber, "The Purification of a Niddah: The Torah Requirement."

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>161</sup> If even a one-day impurity requires washing (e.g., Lev 15:16–17), certainly washing is indicated following seven days of menstruation; see T. Hieke, "Menstruation and Impurity," p. 60.

#### 5. Washing

the time of discharge.<sup>162</sup> The reason for subsequent washing, I would argue, is that this is a case of residual impurity, i.e., impurity that continues beyond the flow itself. For a נְבּעְבָה, purification rites only begin seven days after the cessation of the discharge.

## 5.2 Immersion vs. Pouring

The manner of washing is not described in P. Immersion in a natural water source is one possibility. Full-body bathing might have been done when such water sources were available (e.g., Naaman immersing in the Jordan river to heal his אָרָעָת, 2 Kgs 5:10). However, while Jerusalem and the Judean mountain regions have abundant springs, areas such as the Shephelah and Beersheba region have very few.<sup>163</sup> A second possibility is immersion in a bath installation constructed for purification. The archaeological record, however, shows almost no sign of such installations before late Second Temple times,<sup>164</sup> even at sites where toilets have been identified.<sup>165</sup> This leads many to the conclusion that washing was typically performed by pouring water from a vessel.<sup>166</sup> Aside from the text of P not precluding it, and the laver/אָיָ in front of the Tent of Meeting itself exemplifying nonimmersive washing (Exod 30:18–19), purification by pouring water is attested throughout the ancient Near East, such as the Mesopotamian purification ceremony *bit rimki*.<sup>167</sup>

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>162</sup> The verse ווֹלָ אַשָּׁר וְצָע בּוֹ הַזָּב וְיָדָיו לא שָׁטַף בַּמִיָם (Lev 11:15) seems to point to an unstated assumption that a זָב would normally be expected to rinse his hands (and other soiled parts of the body) for hygienic purposes.
<sup>163</sup> See H. Katz, "He Shall Bathe," p. 375.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>164</sup> See B. Gordon, "Origins of the Miqveh," pp. 423–424.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>165</sup> See H. Katz, "He Shall Bathe," p. 377 n. 30.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>166</sup> A reconstruction of the washing procedure is proposed by A. Faust and H. Katz, "Archaeology of Purity and Impurity," pp. 15–16. See also H. Katz, "He Shall Bathe," pp. 377–380; B. Gordon, "Origins of the Miqveh," p. 423.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>167</sup> See H. Katz, "He Shall Bathe," pp. 377–380; B. Gordon, "Origins of the Miqveh," p. 424.

# 5.3 Water Purification in the Ancient Near East

In Hittite ritual, sexual relations must be followed by bathing, and to approach sacrificial items without doing so is a capital crime: "Whoever sleeps with a woman... if he knowingly postpones it and without having bathed approaches the gods' sacrificial loaves (and) libation bowl in an unclean condition... they are liable to the capital penalty; both of them shall be killed." Kitchen servants in charge of the gods' provisions are likewise warned to cleanse themselves: "Spend much reverent care upon the gods' sacrificial loaves (and) libation bowls... As to yourselves, you shall be bathed and dressed in clean garments..."<sup>168</sup>

Mesopotamian examples attest to a dual function of water—purgation and invigoration.<sup>169</sup> Babylonian water purification rites include incantations for ridding people of illness and demonic forces, for instance: "Id, Lady of pure waters, Marduk, son of Eridu, [remove] this sickness,"<sup>170</sup> and "Perform the Incantation of Eridu, bring unto him a censer, a torch. With the purest water wash him, and cleanse and purify the king, the son of his god."<sup>171</sup> And similarly: "Go, my son, (Marduk); pour forth water from an *assamu* vessel, lay a sprig of *mashtakal* on his heart, with the water perform the Incantation of Eridu, sprinkle this man with the water, bring unto him a censer, a torch, that the Plague-demon, which resteth in the body of the man, like the water may trickle away!"<sup>172</sup> The regenerative power of water owes to it being localization of the deity, purification rites invoking the presence of the god Ea (= "the house of water" in Sumerian). One prayer against evil spirits states, "When I sprinkle the water of Ea on the sick man... May a kindly Spirit, a kindly Guardian, be present at my side."<sup>173</sup> The vitalizing potency of water is mentioned in the myth of Ishtar's

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>168</sup> ANET 3, p. 209.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>169</sup> According to Thompson, water "had a double meaning, symbolizing as it did the cleansing of the man from the spell and the presence of the great god Ea" (R. C. Thompson, *Devils and Evil Spirits*, p. xlviii).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>170</sup> *Utukki Limnûti*, Tablet III; ibid., p. 27.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>171</sup> *Utukki Limnûti*, Tablet XVI, ibid., p. 103.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>172</sup> Utukki Limnûti, Tablet "A"; ibid., p. 119.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>173</sup> Utukki Limnûti, Tablet III, ibid., pp. 19, 21.

descent into the underworld, wherein the goddess Ereshkigal says, "Sprinkle Ishtar with the water of life and take her from My presence!"<sup>174</sup>

In ancient Egypt, the waters of the Nile are viewed as both cleansing and vivifying. Bathing in the morning is part of the daily routine (also attested in the Bible, e.g., Exod 7:15). In pharaonic ceremonies of infancy and coronation, the pharaoh would be sprinkled with water, as depicted in scenes where the droplets formed the shape of an *ankh*, the symbol of life. According to Alan Gardiner, "the rite was intended to transfer to the Pharaoh a goodly portion of the power of the divinities."<sup>175</sup> Regarding the morning washing performed by Egyptian priests before entering the sacred precincts, Serge Sauneron remarks:

In making their ablutions, not only do they purify their bodies but divine life little by little enters them: the sacred water, like the primordial sea from which the world came in the beginning, is regenerative: whoever is sprinkled with it feels himself invaded by a new power, raised from this life below to the eternal world where the gods reside.<sup>176</sup>

The regenerative potency of water in ancient Egypt is attested as well by the multiple ritual washings of the dead in preparation for the afterlife.<sup>177</sup> This conception of water is described by Mircea Eliade: "Contact with water always brings a regeneration—on the one hand because dissolution is followed by a new birth, on the other because immersion fertilizes and multiplies the potential for life."<sup>178</sup> Indeed, the Akkadian word for water,  $m\hat{u}$ , also means "semen."<sup>179</sup>

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>174</sup> ANET 3, pp. 108–109.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>175</sup> A. Gardiner, "The Baptism of Pharaoh," p. 12.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>176</sup> S. Sauneron, *The Priests of Ancient Egypt*, p. 79.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>177</sup> See J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 959, citing A. M. Blackman, "Purification (Egyptian)," pp. 476–479.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>178</sup> M. Eliade, *The Sacred and the Profane*, p. 130.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>179</sup> See J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 962.

# 5.4 The Functions of Washing in P

Milgrom acknowledges "the resuscitative powers of water" in ancient Near Eastern ritual but argues that for Israel, water used for washing "is not regenerative, only purificatory,"<sup>180</sup> i.e., purgative. As evidence, he notes that water is not described by P as having special properties (e.g., it is not described as עְּחוֹר, and of the thirty-six times washing is prescribed in P, only once (regarding the גָּר Lev 15:13) is מַיָּם מַיָּם מַיָּם מַיָּם concedes, then, that מִיָם מַיָּם מַיָּם מַיָּם מַיָּם מַיָּם מַיָּם is has special properties over and above regular water. Elsewhere, he indicates that the use of מִיָם מַיָּם מִיָם מַיָּם מַיָּם מַיָּם (see Sec. 8.4.1). Also, there are other cases (מִיָם מַיָּם מַיָּם מַיָּם מַיָּם מַיָּם מִיָם מִיָּם מָיָם מַיָּם מַיָּם מַיָּם is used as the substrate for sprinkling formulas. Thus, there are multiple cases in P where water, even according to Milgrom, is invested with special potency. I would suggest that this potency is regenerative, not merely purgative. If P sees מִיִם מִיִם (spring water) as possessing special regenerative power, it is hardly a leap to suppose that it views purificatory water in general as an agent of vitalization and replenishment, i.e., beyond purgation.

That water does more than purge impurity is a point later made by Milgrom, who notes that in non-priestly texts the verb הַתְקָדֶשׁ is used to describe ritual washing.<sup>181</sup> He defines the term: "literally, 'sanctify oneself'" and says regarding ritual ablution in the Bible that "there is no difference whatever between Priestly and non-Priestly texts regarding its modus operandi." That is to say, washing is understood in P not just as an act of purgation but as a rite of elevation and preparation for contact with the sacred. The reason the priestly writers do not use the verb הַתְקַדֶּשׁ for ritual bathing, says Milgrom, is that "P and H reserve the root *qdš* for sacred objects or persons."<sup>182</sup>

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>180</sup> Ibid., p. 963.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>181</sup> E.g., Exod 19:10–15; 1 Sam 21:5–6; 2 Sam 11:2–4; and implied in Num 11:18, 31; Josh 3:5, 7:13–14.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>182</sup> J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, pp. 965–967.

#### 5. Washing

That said, I would distinguish between what I call "life-infusing" rites, which include the use of ingredients of magical potency such as מים חיים and blood, and "refreshing and cleansing" rites, which include more common, hygienic practices like washing and laundering (see Sec. 3.2.1). Washing has several functions as part of purification: (1) It cleanses and purges. Besides physical cleansing, even ordinary water has "life" associations and is thus used to banish deathly forces. (2) It refreshes and invigorates, not only symbolically but empirically. Modern studies show that washing either in cold or warm water has positive physiological and psychological effects: Washing with cold water increases blood flow to underlying tissues, elevates the metabolism, improves circulation, and decreases the stress hormone cortisol.<sup>183</sup> Warm-water bathing stimulates blood flow due to vasodilation, imparts a feeling of relaxation, and decreases anxiety and depression.<sup>184</sup> The pleasant, invigorating somatic experience reinforces the belief that life has overcome the forces of death.<sup>185</sup> (3) Washing serves as a rite of transition and readmission. That P holds this view is evidenced by the fact that washing is performed not at the outset of impurity but at the close (e.g., in cases of corpse contamination, abnormal genital discharge, and צרעת, see Sec. 3.2.2). These three functions complement one another, leaving the purification candidate feeling cleansed, refreshed, renewed, and ready to transition back into regular life.

#### In sum

Water both purges deathly forces and replenishes in their wake. The latter, vivifying function is attested in the ancient Near East. It is also reflected in P's language of מַיָם חַיִּים and in the non-priestly use of the verb הַתְקַדָּשׁ to describe washing. Washing offers tangible,

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>183</sup> A. Mooventhan and L. Nivethitha, "Scientific Evidence-Based Effects of Hydrotherapy," pp. 199–209.
<sup>184</sup> Y. Goto, et al., "Physical and Mental Effects of Bathing: A Randomized Study."

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>185</sup> In the same way that fatigue, disease, or other outward physical signs reinforce the belief in the presence of deathly forces (see Sec. 3.1), so too do tangible, outward signs of health and vitality demonstrate the absence of these forces.

#### 5. Washing

empirical effects of invigoration and wellbeing, which both refresh and provide confirmation that the deathly presence has been expelled. The fact that washing takes place at the end of the period of impurity points to it also serving as a rite of renewal and readmission.

# 6. Laundering

Several cases in priestly texts require laundering clothes (C.E.) as part of purification:

- Animal carcasses One who carries the carcass of an animal forbidden for consumption (Lev 11:25, 28), who eats or carries the נְבֵלָה of a permitted animal (11:40, 17:15), or who eats אָרָפָה (17:15).
- Skin מְצֹרְעָת A מְצֹרְע, on the first and seventh day of purification (Lev 14:8–9), or one under investigation for אַרְעָת whose outbreak faded or did not spread (13:6, 34).
- Cloth/leather אָרָעָת An item with an outbreak that did not spread, both before and after an additional seven days of quarantine (Lev 13:54, 58).
- Abnormal genital discharges A זָב, after counting seven days following cessation of the discharge (Lev 15:13), one who touches the bedding of a זָב/זָבָה, who touches or carries something they sat on (vv. 5–7, 26–27); who is spat on by a זָב (v. 8), or who is touched by a זָב who hasn't washed his hands (v. 11).
- Seminal emission Cloth or leather onto which semen has fallen (Lev 15:17).
- *Menstruation* One who touches the bedding of a menstruating woman or an object on which she sat (Lev 15:21–22).
- Atonement Day rites The person who dispatches the Azazel goat (Lev 16:26), or who burns the הַפָּאַת bull and goat outside the camp (vv. 27–28).
- *Levites* The Levites, as part of their dedication rite (Num 8:7, 21).
- Red cow/corpse contamination A corpse-contaminated person on the seventh day (Num 19:19, 31:24), or the priest who throws the ingredients into the red cow fire (19:7), burns the red cow (v. 8), gathers the ashes (v. 10), or sprinkles the age age age (v. 21).

Two related cases warrant mention. One is laundering a garment containing the blood of the הָכָבֵּס בְּמָקוֹם קָדִשׁ). Some consider this to be a case of impurity,<sup>186</sup> though others view it as laundering not for purification but rather as proper disposal of the sacred.<sup>187</sup> The second case, not in P, involves the Israelites laundering their clothes as part of the three-day preparation prior to the Sinai theophany (Exod 19:10, 14).

### 6.1 Biblical Laundering Methods

P does not explain what laundering garments entails and assumes the reader knows how to perform it. Verses elsewhere in the Bible speak about laundering with the aid of גָּתָּר (Jer 2:22, natron) and בְּרֵית (Mal 3:2, lye or potash), made from the ash of certain plants. Both serve as detergents, producing an alkaline solution in water capable of removing dirt and grease.<sup>188</sup> The verb בְּבֵּס is defined as laundering or fulling and is thought to perhaps be cognate with the Akkadian *kabāsu*, meaning "trample" or "crush" (as well as כָּבָּס, meaning "subjugate"), implying laundering by means of beating or pounding.<sup>189</sup> The fulling process involves placing cloth into a basin with water and detergent and treading on it with the feet.

Two cases in P explicitly specify laundering using water: One is cloth or leather with semen on it, וְכָבֵּט בַמַיִם, "and it will be laundered with water" (Lev 15:17); the other is in reference to the person who burns the red cow, יְכָבֵט בְּמַיִם וְרַחֵץ בְּשֵׁרוֹ בַּמַיִם, "he shall

<sup>188</sup> See J. Blenkinsopp, *Isaiah 1–39*, "Excursus: The Ancient Craft of Washing Clothes" (7:3–9); A. Neufeld, "Hygiene Conditions in Ancient Israel," p. 54.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>186</sup> See e.g., J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 404.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>187</sup> Wenham explains that the blood used to purify the altar must be removed in accordance with the principle of "not confusing the holy and the common" (G. J. Wenham, *Leviticus*, "The Purification Offering [6:17–23]"). Grossman takes this approach as well, emphasizing that holiness—like impurity—is contagious, and that holiness is not allowed to spread and is therefore washed out before the clothing can be reused; see J. Grossman, *The Sacrificial Service*, pp. 434–435. It seems to me that requiring the clothing to be washed via grave is itself compelling evidence that the concern here is holiness and not impurity.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>189</sup> See B. A. Levine, Numbers 21–36, pp. 458–459; HALOT, s.v. כבס.

launder his garments in water, and he shall wash his body in water" (Num 19:8). It stands to reason that the more common formulation, וְכָבֶּט בְּעָדִי וְרָחֵץ בְּשֶׁרוֹ בְּמֵיִם (and similar) is a shortened formulation where the term בַּמֵיִם is implied for laundering. Whether this means water only or with a detergent is difficult to know. However, if (a) laundering for purification does not entail the removal of a physical substance (unlike laundering to remove the blood of the term בְּמֵיִם means the same thing for laundering as it does for washing (which does not involve the use of detergents), then perhaps we can conclude that water alone suffices for the purification rite.

# 6.2 Occasions for Laundering

In rabbinic literature, the laundering requirement is thought to indicate a more severe case of impurity.<sup>190</sup> However, many one-day—and presumably minor—impurities are said to require laundering, such as secondary impurity (e.g., touching the bedding of a בָּרָ Lev 15:5) or red cow/ מָר בָּרָה impurity (Num 19). Alternatively, laundering might simply indicate the presumption of contact between an impure substance and the clothing—for instance, when carrying a carcass (Lev 11:25, 28) or gathering the ashes of the red cow (Num 19:10).<sup>191</sup> However, in cases of corpse contamination, abnormal genital discharges, and skin גָרְעָרָעָת, laundering takes place seven days after cessation of contact with the source of impurity, during which time the person may have already changed clothes,<sup>192</sup> in the same way that they would have already washed soiled areas of the body (see Sec. 5.1).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>190</sup> See e.g., Rashi on Lev 11:25, כל מקום שנאמרה טומאת משא חמורה מטומאת המגע שהיא טעונה כיבוס בגדים; Ibn Ezra on Num 19:10, ואחר שאמר שיכבס את בגדיו אין צורך להזכיר שירחץ במים.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>191</sup> Milgrom cites Naḥmanides that laundering is required when there is direct contact between an impure item and the clothes but then argues this is the case only in cases of "intense" contact, as defined by the manner or duration of contact; see J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 668.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>192</sup> Changing clothes would have been possible for those with enough means to possess more than one set of garments, which may have included everyone but the truly destitute. For instance, Eckhart Otto understands the law in Exod 22:8 to assume that people generally have at least one extra set of clothing, since "they can go to court and the sanctuary even if one piece of their clothing is lost." This is as opposed to the law in vv. 25–26, directed to those in such financial straits that they must use their only set of clothing as collateral; see E. Otto,

In such cases, I would argue that the clothing becomes impure not from contact with an offending substance but rather from the inside-out, meaning that the person's residual impurity is thought to transfer from body to clothing.<sup>193</sup> Thus, in some cases, laundering is required to expunge impure substances (or invisible traces thereof) from clothing following direct contact, while in other cases, it is required due to impurity on the body infecting the clothes.

## 6.3 The Functions of Laundering in P

I would suggest that laundering, like washing, serves several functions in P: (1) It cleanses and purges, both in the physical sense of ridding fabric or leather of impure substances and in the sense of banishing the forces of death by use of water, a "life" substance. (2) Laundering implies putting on a clean set of clothing, imparting feelings of refreshment and renewal. (3) Donning fresh, pure clothing is a rite of transition/readmission into normal life, as well as preparation for approaching the sacred.

Only the first function involves purgation; the second two functions are not focused on the act of laundering but rather on wearing freshly laundered clothes. The emphasis on changing one's clothes is attested as part of purification, for instance when Jacob tells his family: הָסָרוּ אֶת אֱלֹהֵי הַנֵּכְר אֲשֶׁר בְּתֹכְכֶם וְהַשַּהֲרוּ וְהַחֲלִיפוּ שִׁמְלֹתֵיכָם , "remove the foreign gods in your midst, and purify yourselves, and change your clothes" (Gen 35:2). Changing clothes is associated in other biblical texts with rites of transition, such as coming out of mourning (Gen 38:14, 2 Sam 12:20), leaving captivity (Gen 41:14, Deut 21:13), and

<sup>&</sup>quot;Clothing in Biblical Law," p. 324. Cf. Propp, who does not view 22:25–26 as describing a case of one set of clothes; rather, since the ancient Israelites use clothing as bedding, the idea of withholding a garment is a symbolic way of expressing that collateral should not be held overnight; see W. H. Propp, *Exodus 19–40*, pp. 261–262.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>193</sup> For corpse contamination, however, laundering is required for an additional reason: the person has just been sprinkled with מֵי נְדָה.

#### 6. Laundering

undergoing an elevation in social status (Ruth 3:3). The priests must don special garments to serve in the sanctuary, a dictate whose infringement comes at penalty of death (Exod 29:43). Laundering prior to the Sinai theophany (Exod 19:10) is a purificatory act but is clearly geared toward preparation for a divine encounter. For the מִצֹרָע and the בָּב (and possibly implied for the postpartum mother), washing and laundering precedes coming before YHWH to offer sacrifices.

Ancient Near Eastern texts likewise pair bathing and wearing fresh clothes as part of a ritual complex for transition and preparation for an elevated state/encounter. For instance, Hittite temple officiants are instructed: "When a servant is to stand before his master, he is bathed and clothed in clean (garments)."<sup>194</sup> Gilgamesh, in the Babylonian epic, is told to cease wandering and rejoice, which includes bathing and laundering: "Let thy garments be sparkling fresh, thy head be washed; bathe thou in water"<sup>195</sup> (cf. Eccl 9:8). The preparation of Ishtar's lover Tammuz includes washing, anointing, and changing clothes: "Wash him with pure water, anoint him with sweet oil; clothe him with a red garment, let him play on a flute of lapis."<sup>196</sup>

#### In sum

Laundering of clothes in the purification process accomplishes several things: In some cases, it cleanses the material of an impure substance. In other cases, it purges forces of death imparted to clothes via contact with the body. Laundering also involves donning fresh garments, which functions, along with washing, to refresh and prepare the person for readmission to society and normal life.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>194</sup> Hittite Instructions for Temple Officials, col. 2; *ANET 3*, p. 207.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>195</sup> Epic of Gilgamesh, Old Babylonian Version, iii:10–11; ibid., p. 90.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>196</sup> Descent of Ishtar to the Nether World, Reverse, 48–49; ibid., p. 109.

Several cases in P call for shaving the body or head:

- Skin מְצֹרְעַת A מְצֹרָע, on the first and seventh day of purification (Lev 14:8–9), or during investigation, shaving the area around the outbreak (Lev 13:33).
- Levite purification The Levites, during their dedication rite (Num 8:7, 21).
- *Nazirite* A nazirite who inadvertently becomes corpse-contaminated (Num 6:9), or upon completion of the vow (Num 6:18).

## 7.1 Hair and Shaving in the Bible and Ancient Near East

In the Bible and ancient world, hair—especially in abundance—represents beauty, virility, strength, heroism, and even wildness.<sup>197</sup> For example, Absalom is noted for his beauty, the key description being his long head of hair which he cuts once a year when it becomes too heavy for him (2 Sam 14:25–26). Esau the hunter is dubbed אַישׁ שָׁעָר, a "hairy man" (Gen 27:11). Elijah is called a בָּעַל שַׁעָר, "a person of (much) hair," whom Martin Buber describes as a "zealous and inflexible nomad, long-haired, wrapped in a hairy garment with a leather girdle, reminiscent of the Babylonian hero Enkidu of the Gilgamesh epic."<sup>198</sup> Samson is the nazirite, judge, and hero whose hair endows him with superhuman strength, enabling him to tear a lion apart with his bare hands (Judg 14:6), rip through rope used to bind him (15:14), and kill a thousand men with the jawbone of a donkey (v. 15). When Delilah finally succeeds in cutting off the locks of his hair, the text says of Samson, ויָסָעָר מָרוֹ מָעָלָיו, "his strength left him" (16:19). Also, the prophets depict Israel and Jerusalem's destruction using the metaphor of shorn hair, i.e., as a loss of beauty and vigor (e.g., Isa 7:20, Ezek 5:1).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>197</sup> G. Mobley, Samson and the Liminal Hero, p. 10.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>198</sup> M. Buber, Prophetic Faith, p. 76.

In Ancient Near Eastern literature, hair likewise represents strength, heroism, and wildness. An Akkadian myth describes a man standing before Namtar, vizier of the underworld: "the hair of his head he held in his left, while in his right [he held] a sword."<sup>199</sup> The deity Nanna is described: "its head of hair [rea]ches to the pedestal, [... in fr]ont of it are (placed) the Storm (*abûbu*) Dragon and the Wild Bull."<sup>200</sup> Gilgamesh lets his hair grow and roams as a nomad: "He will his body with uncut hair invest, will don a lion skin and roam over the steppe."<sup>201</sup>

Being viewed as the seat of vitality and life force, hair is also used in cultic offerings.<sup>202</sup> A ninth century B.C.E. Phoenician dedication bowl to the goddess Astarte, found in Kition, has an inscription that is understood to read, "an offering here of a plait of hair."<sup>203</sup> Milgrom speculates regarding Absalom that he presented his cut hair yearly at the sanctuary as an offering, and points to the cultic offering of a nazirite's hair as an explicit Israelite example of such a rite.<sup>204</sup>

Apart from the מְּצֹרְע , Levites, and nazirite, other mentions of shaving in priestly texts are proscriptive. These include prohibitions against shaving bald patches into parts of the beard or head (Lev 19:27, 21:5; cf. Deut 14:1, Ezek 44:20), mourning customs that appear to have been common in ancient Israel<sup>205</sup> and are thought to be associated with the cult of the dead.<sup>206</sup> In the Deuteronomic Code, the law concerning the female captive of war requires the woman to shave her head upon entry into the Israelite's home (Deut 21:12). This is

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>199</sup> Vision of the Nether World, Reverse; ANET 3, p. 109.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>200</sup> Nabonidus and the Clergy of Babylon; ibid., p. 313.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>201</sup> The Epic of Gilgamesh; ibid., p. 86.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>202</sup> See J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 17–22*, p. 1802.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>203</sup> See M. J. Lundberg, "Four Cypriot Inscriptions," p. 123.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>204</sup> See J. Milgrom, "Nazirite," pp. 45–46.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>205</sup> See e.g., Isa 22:12, Jer 41:5, Amos 8:10, Mic 1:16; cf. pulling out the hair in Ezra 9:3.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>206</sup> See J. Milgrom, *Leviticus* 17–22, pp. 1690–1691.

commonly interpreted either as part of the woman's mourning process<sup>207</sup> or as an act of cutting her off from her past so as to be absorbed into Israelite society.<sup>208</sup>

Elsewhere in the ancient world, shaving the head was common for cult officiants, including Sumerian<sup>209</sup> and Egyptian priests,<sup>210</sup> the latter of whom would shave their entire body as part of ongoing service.<sup>211</sup> Ezekiel 44:20, which states that priests must not shave their heads (or wear untrimmed hair, cf. Lev 10:6), seems to be a response to these practices. There is also evidence of Babylonian and Akkadian priests shaving during their initiation,<sup>212</sup> and the Akkadian word for "shave," *gullubu(m)* (also attested in Biblical Hebrew, פּער הַפּלְבִים, Ezek 5:1), is used in connection with cultic dedication.<sup>213</sup> Hittite officiants of the temple are instructed to shave before preparing the daily loaves: "Let them be bathed (and) groomed, let their (body) hair and nails be removed."<sup>214</sup> While no doubt cleanliness and hygiene play a role in cultic shaving, Edmund Leach argues that long hair is associated with unrestrained sexuality, whereas a shaven head is the mark of celibacy, akin to a rite of castration or circumcision.<sup>215</sup> Shaving the head can thus indicate sublimating libido and dedicating one's energies to the cult/deity.

<sup>212</sup> Ibid.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>207</sup> See D. L. Christensen, *Deuteronomy*, comment on 21:12–13.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>208</sup> See S. M. Olyan, "What Do Shaving Rites Accomplish?", p. 619.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>209</sup> See W. G. Lambert, Ancient Mesopotamian Religion and Mythology, p. 189.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>210</sup> See R. Wallenfels and J. M. Sasson, *The Ancient Near East*, p. 14.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>211</sup> See W. G. Lambert, Ancient Mesopotamian Religion and Mythology, p. 189.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>213</sup> See J. A. Black, et al, *A Concise Dictionary of Akkadian*, p. 96. Shaving the face and body was also the normative practice in ancient Egypt, exemplified in the Bible in Joseph's shaving as part of his preparation to meet Pharaoh (Gen 41:14).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>214</sup> ANET 3, p. 209.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>215</sup> See E. R. Leach, "Magical Hair," pp. 154–157. Egyptian priests were circumcised as well; see W. G. Lambert, *Ancient Mesopotamian Religion and Mythology*, p. 189.

## 7.2 Shaving in P: Renewal, Purification, and Disposal

P's impurity legislation prescribes full-body shaving for the and for the Levites מצרע during their dedication, and head-shaving for the impure nazirite.<sup>216</sup> The מצרע, once healed, is instructed to shave their entire body twice: once following the two-bird rite and again seven days after reentering the camp (both times accompanied by laundering and bathing, Lev 14:8–9). What is the purpose of this shaving? Wenham cites an anthropological view that shaving, along with washing and sacrifices, represent "rites of aggregation," wherein a person in an abnormal social state is reintegrated into the community.<sup>217</sup> The fact that both instances of shaving precede phases of reentry—the first into the camp and the second into one's own tent—perhaps bolsters such a view. Olyan understands all instances of ritual shaving in the Bible as marking a transition.<sup>218</sup> Full-body shaving is seen by some as an act of renewal, with the person's bare, hairless skin rendering them similar to a newborn.<sup>219</sup> Additionally, shaving can be understood as part of purification, no less so than washing and laundering. According to Wenham, "shaving and washing obviously portray cleansing from the pollution caused by the skin disease."<sup>220</sup> Similarly, Hartley suggests that "shaving removes all surface impurity," that doing so twice only underscores priestly meticulousness regarding purity standards, and that shaving along with washing would remove any remaining scales lodged in the hair.<sup>221</sup>

I would say further that the stipulation of shaving "all his hair" makes it less plausible that reabsorption or renewal are primary motives for the rite. A person without hair on the head, beard or eyebrows makes for an abnormal and even shocking visage, if anything

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>216</sup> In addition, for scalp or beard אָרָעָת, shaving is prescribed on the seventh day of quarantine, when the person shaves around the scall (Lev 13:33). This is part of examination and diagnosis, to test whether the scall spreads in the days to follow. The Mishna instructs to shave around the scall, leaving a two-hair buffer around it to determine if it spread (m. *Nega im* 10:5).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>217</sup> See G. J. Wenham, *Leviticus*, "Rituals outside the camp" (14:2–9).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>218</sup> See S. M. Olyan, "What Do Shaving Rites Accomplish?", p. 621.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>219</sup> See R. K. Harrison, *Leviticus*, pp. 150–151; cited by J. E. Hartley, *Leviticus*, comment on 14:9.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>220</sup> See G. J. Wenham, *Leviticus*, "Rituals outside the camp" (14:2–9).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>221</sup> J. E. Hartley, *Leviticus*, comment on 14:8–9.

singling them out rather than integrating them into the rest of society. Hartley points out that ancient Israelites were generally prohibited from shaving their sideburns or the corners of their beards (Lev 19:27).<sup>222</sup> Neither is such extreme shaving an invigorating act, like washing. Rather, it reflects a high level of concern that the אָרְעָת be completely expunged before reintroducing the person into normal human contact. Moreover, the word וְשָׁתֵּר both times follows the triad of shaving, washing and laundering, and so the plain meaning would seem to be that these three acts are first and foremost intended to purify.

The same is the case regarding the Levites, where shaving is explicitly mentioned as a rite of purification: יְהָשֶׁרָם... יְהַשֶּׁרָי תַּעַר עַל כְּל בְּשֶׁרְם... יְהָשֶׁהָרוּ (Num 8:7). Levine understands this shaving, accompanied by laundering and sprinkling with מִי חַפָּאָרָם מִי חַפָּאָרָם directive to meet "purificatory requirements," comparable to מִי חַפָּאַרָע purification.<sup>223</sup> That is to say, themes of transition, change in social status, renewal, and—in this case—cultic dedication and submission may indeed serve as layers of meaning for shaving as part of the Levite dedication, but purification is arguably the chief objective.

The nazirite, on successful completion of the vow, shaves their head and places the sanctified hair on the altar, beneath the גָרַח הַשְּׁלָמִים (Num 6:18). A nazirite who inadvertently becomes impure through contact with a human corpse must shave their head on the seventh day of purification (v. 9). Is this shaving a purificatory act, as with the מִצֹרְע and the Levites? Unlike the cases of the מְצֹרְע and Levites, which call for shaving the entire body, the nazirite shaves only the hair on their head. Moreover, shaving is not a rite indicated in the basic purification instruction for corpse contamination (Num 19). As such, it is thought that

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>222</sup> Ibid.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>223</sup> See B. A. Levine, *Numbers 1–20*, p. 273.

shaving functions here as a means of disposing of a desecrated sanctum prior to restarting the vow.<sup>224</sup>

In addition, there may be reasons to view the hair as being impure. Plainly, it is impurity that causes the hair to become desacralized. Also, the nazirite does not shave at the sanctuary on the eighth day as part of rededication but rather on the seventh day, הְּיָים טְהָרָתוֹ, "on the day of his cleansing" (Num 6:9). Furthermore, the fact that this hair must be removed prior to approaching the sanctuary may testify to the impurity of the hair. Additionally, holiness is thought to be particularly susceptible to impurity. According to Milgrom, impure forces have a "magnetic attraction for the realm of the sacred,"<sup>225</sup> and sanctified hair exposed to corpse impurity is thus especially liable to attract deathly forces. Shaving the impure nazirite's head, then, could perhaps constitute an act of purification in addition to sanctum disposal.

## 7.3 The Limited Scope of Shaving

If hair is particularly predisposed to attract impurity, why is shaving not a more common rite of purification in P? I would speculate that if only for aesthetic reasons, shaving the head, beard, or body is viewed as an extreme measure and therefore used only sparingly. As to why a אָצֹרְע prequires shaving, this may be due to the severity of the case, as an extra precaution against possible contagion, as well as the fact that hair grows out of the skin and is included in the diagnostic process.<sup>226</sup> Regarding the Levites, the reason may be the one-time nature of the rite, as well as the association of ritual baldness with submission and cultic

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>224</sup> Wright interprets the nazirite's shaving in this way: "The shaving of the head does not seem to be purificatory, but rather to remove a desecrated sanctum"; see D. P. Wright, "Unclean and Clean (OT)," A Corpse-Contaminated Nazirite.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>225</sup> See J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 257.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>226</sup> See Lev 13:3–4, 10, 20–21, 25–26, 30–32, 36–37.

dedication. In addition, the Levites are about to serve in the sanctuary, an undertaking fraught with danger of death,<sup>227</sup> and so shaving may be a precautionary measure for extra purity.

Why, then, do Aaron and his sons not undergo shaving upon induction to the cult? It would also be a one-time rite, the danger to the priests (being in closest contact with sancta) is equal if not greater,<sup>228</sup> and if anyone is subject to more rigorous purity measures, it is the priests (e.g., Lev 21). Baruch Levine points out a distinction between levitical and priestly induction: Whereas the Levites are presented as a quasi-offering to YHWH (Num 8:15–16), indicating a servile role, the priests become YHWH's anointed, the officiants of the cult.<sup>229</sup> Perhaps a fully shaven body, though it offers additional purity, does not befit the gravitas and splendor (דָּבָאָרָת Dering and בָּבָוֹד). Exod 28:2, 40) of the priestly office.

#### In sum

Hair in the ancient world is thought to be a locus of vitality, with the potential to be cultivated as a sanctum. As such, it is especially vulnerable to infection by deathly forces. The shaving rites of the q v q r q v q and the Levites are the rare cases where body hair is shaved off, as a means of purging impurity. For the Levites, it may also function as an act of sublimation and cultic dedication, as well as extra protection against the dangers of the sacred realm. Shaving the nazirite's head is done to dispose of a desecrated sanctum and is perhaps also a means of removing impurity.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>227</sup> Lethal danger for the Levites is indicated in handling sacred items (Num 4:15, 19–20; 18:3) and profaning sacred donations (Num 18:32).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>228</sup> For instance, death awaits the high priest who fails to wear bells on his robe (Exod 28:35), or other priests who do not wash their hands and feet (Exod 30:20–21), who drink alcohol while serving (Lev 10:9), or who enter the Holy of Holies without sanction or protection (Lev 16:2).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>229</sup> See B. A. Levine, *Numbers 1–20*, p. 273.

We now move from rites of cleansing and refreshing to the life-imbuing class of rites, ingredients and formulas of magical potency used in more severe cases to banish the deathly forces of impurity and convey life and replenishment to the recipient.

# 8. Sprinkling with Water Mixtures

Several cases in P require sprinkling a water and blood/ash-based formula on the purification candidate:

- Skin אָבָעַת A אָבָעַת is sprinkled in the two-bird rite, on the first day of purification rites after healing (Lev 14:7).
- House אָרָעָת An infected house whose walls have been replastered and where the discoloration has not spread is sprinkled in the two-bird rite (Lev 14:51).
- Corpse contamination A corpse-contaminated person is sprinkled with מֵי נְדָה on the third and seventh days of purification (Num 19:18–19; 31:19), as are the tent and vessels in the room where the corpse lay (Num 19:18), as well as spoils of war (31:20, 22–23).
- Levite purification The Levites are sprinkled with מֵי חַטָּאת during their dedication
   rite (Num 8:7, 21).

In the case of the אָרָעָת (Lev 14), the sprinkling rite comes after the priest determines that the person's אָרָעָת has healed. The priest takes two ritually pure, wild birds and slaughters one of them over an earthen vessel containing מָיָם חָיָים, i.e., spring water from a flowing source. He then takes the second (live) bird, along with cedar wood, red yarn, and hyssop, dips them into the water in the vessel (now also containing the blood of the first bird) and sprinkles the mixture seven times on the מִצֹרָע The live bird is then set free in the open country. After this procedure comes other rites of purification: two sets of bathing, laundering, and shaving (separated by seven days), followed by sacrifices and daubing with blood and oil on the eighth day. For house אָרַעָת apart from removal of the infected stones and plaster, purification consists solely of the two-bird sprinkling/casting-off rite.

69

For corpse contamination (Num 19), a fully red, unworked cow is slaughtered outside the camp and its blood sprinkled seven times toward the Tent of Meeting. The cow is then burned in full, with its blood, along with cedar wood, red yarn, and hyssop, producing an ash mixture that is stored for later use. When needed for purification, the ash is added to a vessel containing מֵיָם חֵיָים and sprinkled on all corpse-contaminated persons on the third and seventh day of the purification period, as well as on the tent which housed the corpse and any vessels in the tent at the time. This water is referred to as מֵיָם מֵי חָשָׁאָם, likely the same mixture as the מֵי חָשָׁאָם used for Levite purification (see Sec. 8.6.3).

We will now look at the ingredients used in the two-bird and red cow rites, beginning with those shared by both—cedar wood, red yarn, hyssop, and <u>מ</u>יִים חַיִּים, and followed by those specific to each rite—the two birds and red cow.

## 8.1 Cedar Wood – אֵץ אֶרֶז

The אָרָז The word אָרָז The word אָרָז The word אָרָז is widely held to be the Lebanon cedar (*Cedrus libani*).<sup>230</sup> The word אָרָז does not mean "tree" (the Lebanon cedar being 12–21 m. tall) but rather a piece of wood, branch, or stick, a size compact enough to be held in the hand along with other ingredients in the two-bird rite. Cedar wood (*erēnu*, Akk.) is used in Mesopotamian ritual to make magical figures and as an ingredient in incense and folk medicine, for instance, "you drive (into the ground) around him (the sick man) three splinters of cedar wood."<sup>231</sup> Its balsam and oil are used as well, e.g., "I daubed its foundation wall with sesame oil, perfumed oil, cedar balsam, honey and ghee," and "you mix (various drugs) in cypress oil (and) cedar balsam, you rub him several times and he will get well."<sup>232</sup> Both cedar and tamarisk are added to water to make magical substances, e.g., "at night you set up a holy water container… you put into it

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>230</sup> See I. Jacob and W. Jacob, "Flora."

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>231</sup> CADe, pp. 276–277.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>232</sup> Ibid., p. 278.

tamarisk and let it stay in the open overnight,"<sup>233</sup> and "white cedar (resin), cedar oil, sesame oil, virgin oil, oil of *nikiptu*, white honey, that are imported into this country (to be put into the holy water basin)."<sup>234</sup>

Cedar is also employed in ancient Near Eastern cults for its pleasant, cleansing odor.<sup>235</sup> Its oil is used in Egypt for embalming fluid,<sup>236</sup> noted in the works of Herotodus<sup>237</sup> and more recently discovered through a chemical analysis of unused embalming material.<sup>238</sup> Cedar wood resists fungus,<sup>239</sup> which may make it particularly useful in treating house צָרַעַת (Lev 14:51), thought to possibly be fungus or mold.<sup>240</sup> Milgrom suggests that "of all woods with magical powers, cedar might have been selected because of its color, red," which is associated with blood and, hence, life.<sup>241</sup> Cedar is known for its strength and is associated with the gods. For instance, cedar wood is the weapon of the storm-god Baal.<sup>242</sup> The cedar forest in Lebanon is held to be the abode of the gods, e.g., "[Gilgamesh and Enkidu] were gazing at the Cedar Land, the dwelling of the gods, the throne of the goddesses."<sup>243</sup> Biblical texts (Ezek 31; 2 Kgs 19) also regard the cedar forest in Lebanon as a divine dwelling place.<sup>244</sup> Cedar wood is used in the construction of the palaces of David (2 Sam 5:11) and Solomon (1 Kg 7:2, referred to as the בִית יַעַר הַלְבַנוֹן), as well as in Solomon's temple (e.g., 1 Kgs 5:20, 6:9; called the בית ארוים in 2 Sam 7:7) and in the second temple (Ezra 3:7).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>233</sup> *CADb*, p. 240.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>234</sup> CADe, pp; 277–278; see also J. Milgrom, Leviticus 1–16, p. 835.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>235</sup> See R. S. Heiss, "Leviticus," p. 702.
<sup>236</sup> See I. Jacob and W. Jacob, "Flora."

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>237</sup> See *The Histories*, Book II, pp. 160–161.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>238</sup> See J. Koller, et al., "Analysis of a pharaonic embalming tar," p. 784.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>239</sup> See I. Jacob and W. Jacob, "Flora." <sup>240</sup> See J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, pp. 870–871.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>241</sup> See ibid., p. 835.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>242</sup> See N. Ayali-Darshan, "Cedar Forest Tradition," pp. 186–187.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>243</sup> See ibid., pp. 187–188.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>244</sup> See ibid., pp. 188–189.

Its godly associations, strength and durability, pervasive use in healing rituals and as a preservative, and its red (bloodlike) hue make cedar a potent, magical ingredient for banishing impurity and helping to convey strength and life to the person undergoing purification.

## 8.2 Red Yarn – שִׁנִי תוֹלַעַת

The דישָׁעָ <sup>245</sup> refers to a crimson-dyed material, typically wool,<sup>246</sup> either a fabric or a cord. The red dye is extracted from the shell of a cochineal (scale insect), specifically the kermes insect (*Kermes ilicis*) that infests oak trees.<sup>247</sup> The origin of the word אָשָׁ is unclear; it is thought to be connected with the Akkadian *šinītu(m)*, meaning rinsing, soaking, dyeing, or dyed textile, though it may be an Egyptian loanword.<sup>248</sup> The term is sometimes used to imply a string or cord, e.g., used to mark Zerah's wrist at birth (Gen 38:28) or hung as a sign from Rahab's house (Josh 2:18). In P, apart from being a sprinkling ingredient, אָשָׁ is one of the precious materials used in the construction of the Tabernacle and priestly vestments (Exod 25:4) as well as in the transport covering for the Tabernacle (Num 4:8). Elsewhere in the Bible, אָשָׁ is mentioned as a color of women's fine clothing (2 Sam 1:24; Jer 4:30; also Prov 31:21), a red hue corresponding to sin (Isa 1:18), and a description of beauty, referring to the color of a woman's lips (Song 4:3).

The biblical text does not discuss the amount of  $\psi$  used in the rites. Rabbinic tradition specifies an amount weighing 10 *zuz* (= 5 *shekels*) in the red cow rite,<sup>249</sup> and 2 *zuz* (= 1 *shekel*) in the two-bird rite, wherein the surplus length of the red cord is used to bind the cedar, wool, and hyssop together.<sup>250</sup>

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>245</sup> Also called הוֹלַעָת שָׁנִי (Exod 25:4, Num 4:8), הוֹלָעַת הַשָּׁנִי (Exod 25:5), שְׁנִי (Gen 38:28, Jer 4:30), הַשְׁנִי (Josh 2:21), הַשְׁנִי (Isa 1:18), מוֹלָע שׁנִי 1:21, Song 4:3), מוֹלָע הַשָּׁנִי (Isa 1:18).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>246</sup> See J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 835.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>247</sup> See E. Firmage, "Zoology."

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>248</sup> See HALOT, s.v. שָׁנִי.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>249</sup> See b. *Yoma* 42a.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>250</sup> See m. Nega'im 14:1.

### 8.2.1 Red Signifying Blood

Of the various dyes used in P (including תְּכָלָת, blue, and אַרְנָמָן, purple), it is שָׁיָ, crimson, that is chosen for sprinkling rites. Milgrom suggests that the color red represents blood, being an association that is "widely attested in primitive cultures."<sup>251</sup> He argues that in the red cow rite, the red hide of the cow, along with the crimson yarn and red cedar, "symbolically adds to the quantity of blood in the ash mixture" and "enhances its potency." Milgrom cites a similar rite by the African Ndembu tribe, where a person reddens the river with the blood of a fowl and also adds powdered red clay and gum.<sup>252</sup> Use of red ochre in burial rites to symbolize blood is attested as far back as the Neolithic period."<sup>253</sup>

Ancient Near Eastern texts also describe the use of red ingredients to simulate blood. One example is found in the tomb of Seti I: "Then the majesty of this god (Re) said: 'Go ye to Elephantine and bring me red ochre very abundantly.' Then this red ochre was brought to him... When further maidservants crushed barley to (make) beer, then this red ochre was added to this mash. Then (it) was like human blood."<sup>254</sup> The Ugaritic tale of Aqhat describes red dye being used to symbolize violence and blood: "She'll slay the slayer [of her brother], destroy the destroyer of [her] sibling... in the sea she bat[hes], and stains herself red with murex... She emerges, dons a youth's raiment, puts a k[nife] in her sheath, a sword she puts in her scabbard..."<sup>255</sup> The annals of King Shalmaneser III explicitly link red-dyed wool with blood: "I piled them up, I covered the wide plain with the corpses of their fighting men, I dyed the mountains with their blood like red wool."<sup>256</sup>

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>251</sup> J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 272.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>252</sup> See ibid.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>253</sup> Giulia Sortini describes red ochre as representing "a return to the earth or possibly as a form of ritual rebirth, in which the colour symbolises blood and the Great Goddess" (G. B. Sorlini, "The Megalithic Temples of Malta," p. 145).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>254</sup> ANET 3, p. 11.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>255</sup> Ibid., p. 155.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>256</sup> Ibid., p. 277.

In Isaiah, אָם יִהְיוּ הַסָּאָיכֶם כַּשְׁיִים :Be your sins like crimson, they can turn snow-white" (1:18). Joseph Blenkinsopp suggests that the transformation of crimson to white creates a "catchword link with the washing of bloodstained hands in the previous stanza."<sup>257</sup> Milgrom explains that red ingredients are used in the two-bird rite "in order to counter and reverse the death process vividly and visually represented by the deterioration of the body stricken with scale disease."<sup>258</sup> In P's purification rites, the red hue of the שׁיָי תּוֹלְעָת תּוֹלְעָת blood, the "life," contributing to the potency of the formula to counteract and replenish from deathly forces.

## 8.3 Hyssop – אֵזוֹב

The אָזוֹב is generally identified as Syrian hyssop (*Origanum syriacum*), a wild herb.<sup>259</sup> In the two-bird rite, hyssop is one of many elements dipped into the water and used for sprinkling, whereas in the red cow rite, the hyssop serves both as an ingredient in the ash mixture as well as the instrument for sprinkling. The use of hyssop as a ritual dispenser is attested elsewhere in the Bible, such as brushing blood on the doorposts during the plague of the firstborn (Exod 12:22). Psalms states, אָמָרָר הְּכַבְּסְנִי וֹמִשֶׁלֶג אַלְבִין with hyssop till I am pure; wash me till I am whiter than snow" (Ps 51:9). In the New Testament, Moses is depicted as using hyssop to sprinkle blood on the people in the covenant ceremony of Exodus 24 (Heb 9:19).

Hyssop is chosen likely for several reasons: (1) It is readily available, growing out of the cracks of rocks (or walls, 1 Kgs 4:33). (2) As a ritual dispenser, its leaves have hairs,

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>257</sup> J. Blenkinsopp, *Isaiah 1–39*, comment on 1:18.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>258</sup> J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 835. Cf. Noga Ayali-Darshan, who argues that the שְׁנִי תוֹלֵעָת in the two-bird rite serves as an impurity transfer agent; see N. Ayali-Darshan, "Scapegoat: The Origins of the Crimson Thread." <sup>259</sup> See I. Jacob and W. Jacob, "Flora"; W. H. Propp, *Exodus 1–18*, p. 407.

giving it the capacity to hold onto liquid.<sup>260</sup> Flowering buds add to the liquid-holding surface area and aid in sprinkling, and the Mishna specifies that the hyssop must contain buds.<sup>261</sup> (3) As an ingredient to be burned in the red cow rite, hyssop is attested in the rabbinic tradition as adding bulk and quality to the ashes.<sup>262</sup> (4) Hyssop was used medicinally in the ancient world as a tonic.<sup>263</sup> (5) The word אוו שאוים be a play on אוים, flow, as in gushing water.<sup>264</sup> For speakers of Biblical Hebrew, this would bring to mind מִיִם חַיִּים and add to the leitmotif of life. (6) Cedar and hyssop may also form a contrasting pair, as indicated in 1 Kgs 5:13, with cedar being mighty and enduring, whereas hyssop is humble and ephemeral.<sup>265</sup>

The triad of cedar, red yarn, and hyssop forms a complex to combat the dark forces of impurity and aid revitalization. Carl Keil and Franz Delitzsch, commenting on the red cow rite, describe the three ingredients:

cedar-wood... as the symbol of the incorruptible continuance of life; and hyssop, as the symbol of purification from the corruption of death; and scarlet wool, the deep red of which shadowed for the strongest vital energy.<sup>266</sup>

## 8.4 Spring Water – מַיִם חַיִּים

The Bible contains nine instances of the term מִיִם חַיִּים חָיִים,<sup>267</sup> and four of these are found in P's legal texts. Only in one case, the גָּב , is washing with מִיִם חַיִים prescribed (Lev 15:13). In the other three instances, P calls for מִיִם חַיִים to be used as the substrate for a formula for sprinkling on a עֵרָעָת Lev 14:5), a עַרָעָת 14:50), and a corpse-contaminated person

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>260</sup> See I. Jacob and W. Jacob, "Flora"; also J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 836.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>261</sup> See m. *Parah* 11:11.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>262</sup> See t. *Parah* 4:6.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>263</sup> See I. Jacob and W. Jacob, "Flora."

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>264</sup> See M. Dahood, *Psalms II: 51–100*, comment on 51:9.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>265</sup> J. Grossman, personal communication.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>266</sup> C. F. Keil and F. Delitzsch, *The Pentateuch*, vol.2, p. 124.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>267</sup> Gen 26:19; Lev 14:5, 50, 15:13; Num 19:17; Jer 2:13, 17:13; Zech 14:8; and Song 4:15.

(Num 19:17). HALOT defines מַיָם חַיִּים as "running water."<sup>268</sup> NJPS translates the term variously as "spring water" (Gen 26:19), "fresh water" (e.g., Lev 15:13, Zech 14:8 and Song 4:15), and "living waters" (Jer 2:13, 17:13; prefaced by the word מָקוֹר). Milgrom suggests that the term מַיָּם חַיִּים חַיִּים refers to flowing spring water, either above the ground or in an artesian well below the ground, but excludes water stored in a cistern.<sup>269</sup>

The amount of water is not specified in P for either the two-bird or red cow rite, but rabbinic tradition prescribes one quarter *log*, the equivalent of one *revi'it*, which contemporary halakhic measurements place between 86–150 ml, or 0.36–0.63 cups.<sup>270</sup> The Talmud cites a tannaitic teaching stipulating that the ashes of the red cow must be visible in the water, and that the blood of the bird in the two-bird rite must also be visible, the quarter-*log* amount being small enough to ensure that the bird's blood is recognizable in the water. For both rites, the water is collected in the vessel first, and the blood or ashes—the facilitating item (q c q c q c q)—is placed on top, where it is more visible.<sup>271</sup> Thus, according to these traditions, it is the appearance of the red blood or ashes, coloring the water, which is key.

### 8.4.1 Scope of Use

Milgrom points out the relative scarcity of the מֵיָם חַיָּים descriptive for purificatory water and suggests that when it is prescribed as the substrate for a purification formula, this functions as "an ancient theurgic recipe, a vestige of and a link to pre-Israelite rituals, shown to be originally exorcistic rites."<sup>272</sup> He also notes that all one-day, "minor" cases of impurity

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>268</sup> HALOT, s.v. תַי.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>269</sup> See J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 923.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>270</sup> See b. *Sotah* 16b and m. *Nega'im* 14:1.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>271</sup> See b. Sotah 16b. Note, however, that in the red cow rite, the verse states וְנָתַן עָלָיו מַיִם חַיִּים אָל כֶּלִי (Num 19:17), meaning that the water is placed on top of the ashes.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>272</sup> J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 963.

"do not require spring water; any water—drawn or collected—will do."<sup>273</sup> According to Milgrom, the use of מַיָם מָיָם מָיָם מָיָם מָיָם מָרָ

However, Milgrom also argues that purificatory bathing for a נְדָה and a נְדָה (neither being explicit in the text) "are derivable from the *zāb*."<sup>274</sup> If the נְדָה requires bathing, presumably it is with מִיִם חַיִּים, like the יִבָּה Likewise for the יִבָּה—if her washing is derivable from the מִיִם חַיִּים מִיִם חַיִּים as well? The Qumran sectarians may in fact have required the use of מִיִם חַיִּים in the case of menstruation. Martha Himmelfarb points out in the rules of menstruation found in 4Q272 that the word [line 16] is visible, likely referring to מִיִם חַיִּים (line 16) is visible, likely referring to מִיִם חַיִּים מִיִם מַיִּים (line 16) is visible, likely referring to מִיִם חַיִּים (line 16) is the condition of the menstruant as analogous to that of the sectarians "understood the condition of the menstruant as analogous to that of the status of a הָרִים (Lev 12:2, 5), should similarly require מַיִם חַיִּים

If מִיָם חַיִּים is explicitly mandated for a מְצָרָע, a corpse-contaminated person, and for a a, and is implied for a וְדָה a, מִדָּה a, מָדָה a not for a postpartum mother, this would mean that *all* cases of impurity lasting beyond one day utilize מִיִם חַיִּים, whether for washing or sprinkling. This hardly makes it an exception in P!<sup>276</sup>

### 8.4.2 Spring Water, Blood, and Life

The word חַיָּים in the phrase מַיָּם חַיָּים, according to John Hartley, "represents its lifegiving power."<sup>277</sup> Similarly, Milgrom says that "it can hardly be an accident" that term מַיָּם is employed: "Since impurity is symbolic of death, its antidote, appropriately, is that

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>273</sup> Ibid., p. 924.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>274</sup> Ibid., p. 924.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>275</sup> M. Himmelfarb, "Impurity and Sin," p. 21.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>276</sup> The question as to why P would omit explicit mention of מַיָם חַיָּים from many cases is valid and worthy of a separate inquiry.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>277</sup> J. E. Hartley, *Leviticus*, comment on 14:5–7.

which gives life."<sup>278</sup> I would suggest that מִיִם חַיִּים, being running water, makes it reminiscent of blood, creating an analogy: As blood courses through flesh and gives life to it, so too water courses through the earth and imparts it with life. Like blood, spring water is a manifestation of p, flowing and moving. It is the dynamic, animating element bestowing life and nourishment, relative to the static, hardened earth through which it courses by way of its many arteries. Both blood and water possess "life," and both are applied in sprinkling rites, as life-substances capable of ridding death-forces and restoring vitality.

## 8.5 Two Wild Birds – שִׁתִּי צִפְּרִים חַיּוֹת

The אָרָר purification rite calls for two birds, which have two descriptors: they must be אָרְרוֹת, i.e., pure, permitted for consumption, and חַלוֹת (Lev 14:4). NJPS translates the latter as "live" and HALOT similarly as "living, alive."<sup>279</sup> Milgrom contests the translation "alive" on the grounds that it is superfluous and instead suggests that חַלוֹת means "wild," undomesticated, which would rule out doves or pigeons.<sup>280</sup> He cites the rabbinic tradition describing them as אַפֶּרִים דְּרוֹר דָרָוֹר הָשָׁרָים דָרוֹר , "free birds,"<sup>281</sup> ones which do not vary greatly in size and will create the proper ratio of blood to water.<sup>282</sup> Milgrom argues that a wild bird is specifically prescribed, as opposed to a pigeon or a dove, "else there would remain the ever-present fear that the live bird dispatched to the open country would return to the settlement and bring back the very impurity it was supposed to eliminate."<sup>283</sup> In addition to this interpretation, Milgrom acknowledges the "life" motif carried by the word חַשָּׁרָים.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>278</sup> J. Milgrom, *Leviticus* 1–16, p. 924.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>279</sup> S.v. תי; see also Hartley (WBC) and Wenham (NICOT) translations.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>280</sup> J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 833. "Wild" may also be implied in כָּי חָיוֹת הַנָּה (Exod 1:19), the midwives' explanation as to the disposition of Hebrew women who manage to give birth before their arrival.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>281</sup> See m. *Nega'im* 14:1. Elsewhere, the Talmud describes a free bird as not allowing itself to be subjugated and that it seeks to evade capture inside a house just as it does in the field (b. *Shabbat* 106b).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>282</sup> See b. *Sotah* 16b.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>283</sup> J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 833.

#### 8. Sprinkling with Water Mixtures

Nonetheless, the notion of "live" must also be denoted here, on thematic grounds. It is also the preferable rendering in the occurrences that follow, vv 6, 7, 51, 53. Life is the theme, the Leitwort, of the ritual: "live" waters (v 5) are employed; blood, the symbol of life, is added to the waters; so too the red yarn and the (red) cedar, which, again symbolically, supplement the blood or life-giving qualities of this potion. In fact, this emphasis on blood and red substances concerns the basic intent of this ritual; because the scale-diseased person is akin to the dead, this rite effects his restoration to life.<sup>284</sup>

### 8.5.1 Parallels to the Two-Bird Rite

One Akkadian text offers a striking parallel to the two-bird rite, involving the treatment of the skin disease *saḥaršubbû*. After the patient is healed, a ritual is performed where a partridge and crab are burned, and a second partridge is wiped on the patient's body and released.<sup>285</sup> In other Akkadian purgative rituals, a male bird is released along with the incantation, "May the evil of this bird cross over [the mountain]," or "May a bird take my sin up to the sky, may a fish take my sin down to the abyss."<sup>286</sup>

In P itself, there is a manifest similarity between the two-bird rite and the two goats of Leviticus 16: The blood of the slaughtered bird, mixed with water, is sprinkled on the קצֹרְע in אָבָרַע הַפָּעָמִים וְטָהֲרוֹ), Lev seven times to effect purification (וְהָזָה עַל הַמִּשַהֵר מִן הַצָּרַעַת שָׁבַע פְּעָמִים וְטָהֲרוֹ), Lev 14:7), and so too the blood of the slaughtered goat is sprinkled seven times on and in front of the ark cover (יַזֶּה שֶׁבַע פְּעָמִים מִן הַדָּם), Lev 16:14)<sup>287</sup> and on the horns of the outer altar of the ark cover (יַזֶּה שֶׁבַע פְּעָמִים מְן הַדָּם), v. 19). The linguistic parallels are evident:

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>284</sup> Ibid., p. 832.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>285</sup> From an Akkadian medical text published in 1999 by Akio Tsukimoto, according to the interpretation of Yitzhaq Feder; see Y. Feder, "Behind the Scenes of a Priestly Polemic," p. 6.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>286</sup> Cited by J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 834.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>287</sup> This verse is speaking about the blood of the bull, but the same procedure is used for the goat: וְעָשָׂה אֶת דָּמוֹ הַפָּר עָשָׂה לְדַם הַפָּר (16:15).

Two-bird rite (Lev 14:7)	Two-goat rite (Lev 16:19)
ុំប <u>ុ</u> រិប	ារិបរិ
עַל הַמִּשַהֵר	עָלָיו
From the water-mixture, with the cedar, hyssop, and red yarn (implied)	מִן הַדָּם בְּאֶצְבָּעוֹ
מָן הַצְרַעַת	מִשָּׁמְאֹת בְּנֵי יִשְׂרָאֵל
שָׁבַע פְּעָמִים	שֶׁבַע פְּעָמִים
וְטִהֲרוֹ	וְטָהֲרוֹ וְקִדְּשׁוֹ

Table 5. Linguistic parallels: Two-bird and two-goat rites

Further, just as the bird left alive is dispatched away from the settlement, over the open field (אָשָׁלֵח אָת הַצָּפֹר הַחַזָּה עַל פְּגֵי הָשָׁדֶה), 14:7),<sup>288</sup> so too is the living goat dispatched away from the settlement, into the wilderness (אָשָׁלֵיר בַּמִדְבָּר).<sup>289</sup> In the Leviticus 16 rite, the rationale for the dispatched goat is stated explicitly: Aaron lays his hands on the goat, confessing the sins of the Israelites and "putting them on the head of the goat" (אָשָׁלֵיר וְעָתַן אַתָּם עַל), 16:21), after which "the goat shall carry upon it all their iniquities to an inaccessible region" (אָשָׁלִיר שָּלְיִי אָת כָּל עֲוֹתָם אָל אָרֶץ גָּוֶרָה), 16:22). The goat acts as a vehicle to transfer away sin. As such, many view the live bird set free over the field likewise as a vehicle for carrying away impurity.<sup>290</sup>

Keil and Delitzsch, however, argue that the bird represents freedom and vitality, "a symbolical representation of the fact that the former leper was now imbued with new vital energy and released from the fetters of his disease."<sup>291</sup> Notwithstanding the possibility of multiple layers of symbolism, it seems to me—based on Akkadian parallels and the clear

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>288</sup> 14:53 adds: אֶל מָחוּץ לָעִיר אֵל פְּנֵי הַשָּׂדֵה, "outside the city, over the open field."

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>289</sup> 16:22 adds: אֶל אֶרָץ וְוָרָה, which NJPS and Milgrom render "to an inaccessible region." 16:10 specifies: לְשַׁלַח אתו לַעֲזָאוַל הַמִדְבָּרָה, "to send it to Azazel in the wilderness."

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>290</sup> See e.g., J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 840; E. Gerstenberger, *Leviticus*, "The Rites" (14:1–32); D. J. Davies, "Sacrifice in Leviticus," p. 397.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>291</sup> C. F. Keil and F. Delitzsch, *The Pentateuch*, vol. 2, p. 385.

analogies to the scapegoat rite, especially sending the bird away to an uninhabited region that removal of impurity is the primary motivation for the dispatched bird.

# 8.6 Red Cow – פָּרָה אֲדֻמָּה

The red cow is given several descriptors in Numbers 19:2: It is a פָרָה, a female, which is unusual in that female cattle are not otherwise prescribed in P's legislation. It must be אַין בָּה whole/complete, and without מום, blemish. Milgrom argues that הָמִמִימָה and הַמִימָה אָין בָּה are synonyms, a "redundancy for the purposes of emphasis."<sup>292</sup> A yoke, על אין שנה, must never have been placed on it, which could indicate that the animal is fit only if has never been used for profane purposes.<sup>293</sup> Albert Baumgarten suggests that not being yoked means that the red cow's "strength is unattenuated" and that its ashes are therefore a "potent agent."<sup>294</sup>

Of course, the cow must also be אָדָמָה, red. Milgrom argues that red is meant "to increase, if symbolically, the amount of blood in the ashes."<sup>295</sup> Levine similarly states, "It seems inescapable that the ruddy color of the cow symbolized blood," pointing out the etymological connection between the words יָ and אָדָם his doctoral thesis on the red cow, Joel Humann suggests that the cluster of words אָדָמָה, אָדָמָה, and שִׁדָ are "so similar phonetically that they absolutely demand paranomasia and speculative etymologization."<sup>297</sup> The word אָדָם, he says, is linked symbolically with שִׁדָמָה, the rite representing a reversal of the creation of human beings, "a return to the dust of the

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>292</sup> See J. Milgrom, *Numbers*, p. 158. Cf. the rabbinic tradition, which understands הְמִימָה as referring to the factor of redness, separate from the requirement of being unblemished (see *Sifrei* Numbers 123:1). <sup>293</sup> See B. A. Levine, *Numbers 1–20*, p. 461.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>294</sup> A. I. Baumgarten, "The Paradox of the Red Heifer," p. 445.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>295</sup> J. Milgrom, *Numbers*, p. 158. Cf. Julius Greenstone, who suggests per the rabbinic tradition that the red cow serves as an atonement for the Golden Calf and "must be red, which is symbolic of sin (Isa 1.18)"; see J. H. Greenstone, *Numbers*, p. 201.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>296</sup> B. A. Levine, *Numbers 1–20*, p. 460.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>297</sup> J. R. Humann, *Ceremony of the Red Heifer*, p. 109. Humann here cites A. Brenner-Idan, *Colour Terms*, p. 161.

earth."<sup>298</sup> The reddish-brown hue of the cow also resembles earth.<sup>299</sup> In addition, the fact that other red ingredients—red yarn, cedar wood, and the cow's blood<sup>300</sup>—are employed in the rite suggests that redness, signifying blood and therefore life, is a key element of the rite.

### 8.6.1 Paradox of the Red Cow

If the ashes of the red cow serve to purify, why should those preparing, handling, and dispensing them be rendered impure? This long-discussed "paradox" of the red cow is evidenced several times in the pericope, where its handlers are made impure during the following procedures: throwing the three ingredients into the fire (vv. 6–7), burning the red cow (v. 8), gathering the ashes (v. 10), and sprinkling or touching the  $\pi q$  (v. 21). Each of these cases necessitates a wait until evening, with some instances requiring washing and/or laundering.<sup>301</sup>

Milgrom's proposed solution to the paradox is that it is a מַשָּאת. A standard feature of the מָשָאת, he says, is that it renders its handlers impure.<sup>302</sup> As an example, he cites the goat and bull pactifices of Leviticus 16, where the person who burns them must wash and launder before reentering the camp.<sup>303</sup> Why does the מָשָאת impart impurity? Says Milgrom, "it absorbs the impurity it has purged," which is why the מַשָּאת carcass is burned outside the camp. As comparative evidence, he cites the Babylonian Akitu festival in which the body of the ram used for cleansing the temple is thrown into the river. Albert Baumgarten points out a problem in Milgrom's reasoning: The bull and goat מַשָּאת of Leviticus 16 are burned after having already absorbed impurity, but the red cow is burned *prior* to absorbing any

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>298</sup> J. R. Humann, p. 109.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>299</sup> HALOT s.v. I אָדָמָה, "orig. the red tilled soil."

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>300</sup> The cow must be burned along with its blood (Num 19:5), which is unlike normal תַּשָּׁאת sacrifices, where the blood is poured out and not burned, e.g., בָּל יָם הַבָּר יִשְׁבָּך אָשֶׁר אָלָה, (Lev 4:7).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>301</sup> A detailed table of cases and purification rites can be found in the Appendix.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>302</sup> J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, pp. 271–272.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>303</sup> The language is indeed similar. Compare וְהַשְׁרֵף אֶתָם יְבָבֵּס בְּגָדָיו וְרָחֵץ אֶת בְּשָׁרוֹ בַּמָּיִם וְאָחֲרֵי כֵן יָבוֹא אֶל הַמַחֲגֶה (Lev 16:28) with וְהַשֹּרֵף אֶתָם יְכַבֵּס בְּגָדָיו בַּמַיִם וְרָחַץ בְּשָׁרוֹ בַּמַיִם וְאָחָרי בַּמַיַם וְרָחַץ בַּמַיַ בַן יָבוּא אָל הַמַחָגָה (Num 19:8).

impurity.<sup>304</sup> David P. Wright, also recognizing this difficulty, suggests that the red cow absorbs impurity "prospectively, before actual use in purification,"<sup>305</sup> a theory that Baumgarten rejects as well. I would add another difficulty, which is the absence of any mention of multiplication (Lev 4–5). Furthermore, P specifically stipulates that the burning of the מָשָאת is to take place in a "pure place" outside the camp, at the site of the altar ash heap (Lev 4:12; see also 6:4), which if anything indicates sanctum disposal rather than impurity disposal.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>304</sup> A. I. Baumgarten, "The Paradox of the Red Heifer," p. 443.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>305</sup> D. P. Wright, "Heifer, Red."

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>306</sup> A. I. Baumgarten, "The Paradox of the Red Heifer," p. 445.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>307</sup> See J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 615, who identifies this as a P verse, not H.

Another solution is offered by Dominic Rudman, who proposes that the מֵי נְדָה constitutes a "weak solution of death" and does not have a cleansing function. Rather, its role is to "cause a more serious contamination of a like nature to become responsive to the usual treatments for impurities," i.e., bathing and laundering.<sup>308</sup> In other words, the greater impurity is diluted by introducing a lesser impurity. As such, Rudman translates מֵי נְדָה (Num 19:12, and impurity." One difficulty with this thesis is the phrase הוא יִתְחַשָּא בוֹ impurity. One difficulty with this thesis is the phrase הוא יִתְחַשָּא בוֹ implying that they themselves purify, not merely make a person receptive to purification.<sup>309</sup> Humann as well points out that there is no indication in the text that dilution is the function of the as the sum of the sum of the sum of the sum of sum of sum of the sum of sum o

Baruch Levine argues that the ashes generate impurity due to the incinerated cow representing death, and that they are effective in clearing corpse contamination based on sympathetic magic:

The operative magical principle in the rites of Numbers 19 is sympathetic: death rids the community of death! Ashes represent annihilation and are, therefore, effective when applied to persons and objects defiled through contact with the dead.<sup>311</sup>

## 8.6.2 A Life-Death Mixture

I would suggest an amended version of Levine's position: The red cow rite employs an element of sympathetic magic within a life-imbuing rite. The red cow ashes possess some "deathly force," but it is harnessed, by use of the life-ingredients, to repel the forces of death incurred by corpse contamination. Nonetheless, by virtue of the deathly component, contact with the ashes produces a minor impurity. Thus, a pure person who comes into contact with

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>308</sup> D. Rudman, "Water for Impurity or Water of Impurity?", p. 75.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>309</sup> See e.g., Levine's translation, "He must purify himself with [the ashes] on the third day..." (B. A. Levine, *Numbers 1–20*, p. 459).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>310</sup> See J. R. Humann, Ceremony of the Red Heifer, p. 169.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>311</sup> B. A. Levine, *Numbers 1–20*, p. 471.

the ashes does not get the benefit but does incur the impurity. An apt analogy might be a medicine that has a healing action but also produces a side-effect. Only the person for whom it is intended will get both the benefit and the side-effect, whereas a person who takes it when it is not indicated will merely experience the side-effect.

Where do we see that the corpse-contaminated person also gets the "side effect," i.e., the minor impurity? I would argue that it is in the wait until evening on the seventh day of purification. In all other cases of impurity lasting more than one day (childbirth, menstruation, abnormal genital discharge, and עַרְעָת ), there is not a single instance where P describes the impurity as terminating in the evening. This requirement for a corpsecontaminated person, I suggest, is not for purposes of concluding the seven days of purification, but due to their being sprinkled with the מָרָקָה just as handlers of the ashes/ יָמָ throughout the chapter must wait until evening. In some cases, the handlers are instructed to launder and wash as well, which the corpse-contaminated person also does on the seventh day, though for the latter it owes to a combination of seventh-day refreshment/transition rites (similar to the עִרָּם and נָרָם) and contact with און און.

### מֵי חַטָּאת and מֵי נִדָּה 8.6.3

The term מֵי (חֵ) מָי (Num 19:9, 13, 20, 21 [x2]; 31:23) is variously interpreted as referring to the act of sprinkling,<sup>312</sup> to "water of expulsion [of impurity],"<sup>313</sup> and to "water of impurity."<sup>314</sup> Only in the Levite dedication is the water mixture called מֵי חֲטָאָת (Num 8:7). Levine believes that מֵי חֲטָאָת and מֵי הַטָּאָת prefer to two different substances.<sup>315</sup> However, the mention of מֵי חֲטָאָת in Numbers 8:7 assumes that the reader understands which purificatory

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>312</sup> See B. A. Levine, *Numbers 1–20*, p. 464; also see Rashi, Shadal on Num 19:9.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>313</sup> See J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 745.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>314</sup> See D. Rudman, "Water for Impurity or Water of Impurity?"

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>315</sup> See B. A. Levine, *Numbers 1–20*, p. 274.

waters are being referred to, and the only candidate is the formula whose detailed instructions appear in Numbers 19.

Also, the Levites are about to undertake the work of the sanctuary, and it is fitting that among their purifications they would cover corpse contamination, especially if they had become contaminated without realizing it, or they knew but subsequently forgot—a scenario explicitly mentioned in P (Lev 5:3). One difference, however, is that whereas Numbers 19 requires sprinkling מֵי נְדָה on the third and seventh days (vv. 12, 19), the case of the Levites mentions only a single application on the day of their purification.

#### In sum

The shared ingredients in the two-bird and red cow sprinkling rites (מַיִם חַיִּים, blood, cedar, red yarn, and hyssop) convey motion, life-force, strength, and vitality—a life motif. Life both banishes the forces of impurity and serves to revitalize from their deathly effects. The dispatched bird helps to carry off the impurity of the מְצֹרֶע , and the ashes of the red cow add a sympathetic (death driving out death) element to the מֵי נְדָה.

Private individuals undergoing purification are required by P to offer sacrifices in the following cases:

- *Childbirth* The postpartum mother, after forty/eighty days of purification (Lev 12:6–8).
- Skin מִצֹרָע The מְצֹרָע, on the eighth day of purification (Lev 14:10–13, 21–24).
- Abnormal genital discharges The זָב/זָבָה, on the eighth day of purification (Lev 15:14–15, 29–30).
- *Impure nazirite* The nazirite, on the eighth day of purification following inadvertent corpse contamination (Num 6:10–12).

The offerings brought are as follows:

Case	Offering	Hardship substitution
Childbirth	1 male lamb (חַטָּאת) 1 bird (עֹלָה)	2 birds (חַטָּאת + עֹלָה)
Skin אָרַעַת	2 male lambs (אָשָׁם + עֹלָה) 1 ewe (תַשָּאת) 3/10 flour with oil (מִנְחָה) 1 <i>log</i> oil	1 male lamb (אָשָׁם) 2 birds (תַשָּאת + עֹלָה) 1/10 flour with oil (מִנְחָה) 1 <i>log</i> oil
Genital discharges	2 birds ( <u>ח</u> ַטָּאת + עֹלָה)	(none)
Impure nazirite	2 birds (חַטָּאת + עֹלָה) 1 male lamb (אָשָׁם)	(none)

Table 6. Private sacrifices for impurity

## 9.1 Why Only Some Impurity Cases Require Sacrifice

Absent from the above list are all forms of one-day impurity, menstrual impurity, and corpse contamination, none of which call for sacrifice.<sup>316</sup> To explain the omission of sacrifice in Numbers 19, Levine remarks on the uniqueness of the red cow rite, being "entirely separate from the Sanctuary and its sacrificial altar," designed specifically so because P wished to distance itself from the cult of the dead.<sup>317</sup> Milgrom argues that corpse contamination and menstrual impurity, having a duration of seven days, are less severe than the cases of multiple and abnormal genital discharge, which are eight-day impurities.<sup>318</sup> But in the latter cases, as well as the case of the impure nazirite, the eighth day rite *is* the sacrifice,<sup>319</sup> so Milgrom's reasoning strikes me as circular.

Elsewhere, Milgrom offers a pragmatic rationale as to why there is no sacrifice following menstruation, saying it would be too great a burden to require women to bring sacrifices every month.<sup>320</sup> A practical reason may also underlie the absence of sacrifice for corpse contamination: A sacrifice entails an outlay of money, and such a demand might dissuade people from tending properly to the dead. Furthermore, it is a secondary contamination. The corpse-contaminated person is not the source of the impurity, and so it is not incumbent upon him or her to bring a sacrifice.

However, an overarching factor determining which cases require sacrifice, I would argue, is indebtedness to YHWH. In most cases, this pertains to survival and recovery: Childbirth, even in the modern, Western world is an ordeal, but the risk of maternal

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>316</sup> Ezekiel, however, indicates that a priest must offer a תְּשָׁאת following purification from corpse contamination (Ezek 44:27), which Milgrom views as an older, more "conservative" tradition; see J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 277.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>317</sup> See B. Levine, *Numbers 1–19*, pp. 470–472.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>318</sup> See J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 277.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>319</sup> See Lev 14:10 (מְצֹרְע); 15:14, 29 (abnormal discharge); and Num 16:10 (nazirite). Eighth-day rites for the מְצֹרְע also include daubing rites using sacrificial blood and oil.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>320</sup> See J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 935.

mortality from exhaustion and hemorrhage in the ancient world was exceedingly high, <sup>321</sup> and emerging intact owed to an act of divine beneficence. Being a אָבֶרע held the potential of a life sentence of disease, disfigurement, and isolation, <sup>322</sup> and being declared pure meant having one's life back. Pathological genital discharge posed a danger to the אָבָרעָבָה, and contagion was a real fear, so recovery must have come as a relief to all. Surviving such ordeals incurs a debt to YHWH, one which is offset via sacrifice. The impure nazirite's sacrifice, by contrast, is not occasioned by survival. It does, however, represent a debt owed for inadvertently breaking a vow to YHWH and being granted a chance to restart it. Unlike corpse contamination, menstruation, and other cases of impurity, the above cases are ones where the person owes something to YHWH for being the recipient of a good, and sacrifice functions to cover that liability. The אָשָׁר אָשָׁר מוּם, מָשָּׁר מוֹם.

## 9.2 Sacrifices Follow Purification

Sacrifice enters at the final stage of purification, after the text already declares the person pure. Prior to offering the sacrifices, the מְצֹרֶע is dubbed "pure" twice, once before readmission to the camp (Lev 14:8) and again before reentering the tent (v. 9). The term , "and he is made pure," is mentioned a third time after sacrificial rites (v. 20), but this additional pronouncement may relate to daubing rites performed with sacrificial blood (vv. 14, 25) rather than to the sacrifices per se. Milgrom notes that the hardship-substitution sacrifice in the case of the מִצֹרָע is not followed by the term וְשָׁהֵר

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>321</sup> See L. K. McClure, *Women in Classical Antiquity*, p. 92. The Bible attests to this as well: Rachel dies following a difficult labor (Gen 35:16–19), and Eli's daughter-in-law is overcome by labor pains and dies (1 Sam 4:19–21).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>322</sup> Uzziah, for instance, lives out his life as a מַצֹּרָע (2 Chr 26:23).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>323</sup> See Sec. 9.3.3. For a more in-depth analysis of sacrifice in P, see e.g., J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*; J. Grossman, *The Sacrificial Service*.

that the mention of וְטָהֵר in v. 20 "is not essential, for it only refers to the effect of the sacrifices,"<sup>324</sup> meaning that the מְצֹרֶע is already pure by the end of the seventh day.<sup>325</sup> Further evidence of this is the fact that the מְצֹרֶע, when presenting the sacrifices, comes before YHWH at the entrance to the Tent of Meeting (לְפְנֵי יְהוָה פֶּתֵר אהֶל מוֹעֵד), v. 11), i.e., inside the holy precinct, the Tabernacle courtyard itself.<sup>326</sup> If the person has any impurity left to resolve, it is evidently not a danger to themselves or the sancta.

As for the other cases, the healed אָבָה count seven days and wash (the latter rite explicit only for the בגון), after which they are called "pure" (Lev 15:13, 28). The following day, they arrive at the entrance to the Tent of Meeting to offer sacrifices, and the text does not restate following the sacrifices that they are "pure" (vv. 15, 30), so every indication is that full purification is achieved prior to eighth-day rites. The impure nazirite's hair is shaved off on the seventh day, which is "the day he becomes pure" (אָבֶּרֶם טְבֶרֶת), Num 6:9). A day later, the nazirite brings sacrifices to the entrance of the Tent of Meeting, and again the text says nothing about their becoming "pure" as a result (vv. 11–12). The case of the postpartum mother would seem present an exception, since she is not declared "pure" until after offering her sacrifices is the only explicit rite prescribed, and she, too, brings her sacrifice to the entrance of the Tent of Meeting. I would argue, therefore, that this case is no different than the others. She is pure for all practical purposes at the end of forty/eighty days.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>324</sup> J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 859.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>325</sup> According to Milgrom, prior to the sacrifices, the מְצֹרֶע is pure for all purposes apart from being permitted to eat from the sacred offerings; see ibid., p. 849.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>326</sup> See J. Milgrom, ibid. Cf. Rashi, ad loc., m. *Nega'im* 14:8, *Sotah* 8a, which say that in the Herodian Temple, the ywould go only up to—and not through—the Eastern/Nicanor gate, leading into the space containing the altar. In the Tabernacle, this would be the equivalent of standing at the opening to the courtyard.

## 9.3 Meaning of the Term כָּפֵר

Rather than "pure," the term accompanied by sacrifices is כְּפֶר, which is employed in all purification cases under discussion:

### Childbirth

- ... וְהָקְרִיבוֹ לְפְגֵי יְ־הוָה וְרָפֶּר עָלֶיהָ וְטָהֲרָה מִמְּקֹר דְּמֶיהָ...
- שְׁהֵי תֹרִים אוֹ שְׁנֵי בְּנֵי יוֹנָה אֶחָד לְעֹלָה וְאֶחָד לְחַטָּאת וְלָבֶּר עָלֶיהָ הַכֹּהֵן וְטָהֵרָה
   (12:8)

### Skin <u>אָר</u>עַת

- וְהַנּוֹתָר בַּשֶׁמֶן אֲשֶׁר עַל כַּף הַכֹּהֵן יִתֵּן עַל רֹאשׁ הַמִּטַהֵר וְּבָבֶּר עָלִיו הַכֹּהֵן לִפְנֵי יְ־הוָה
   14:18)
- וְעָשָׂה הַכֹּהֵן אֶת הַחַטָּאת וְכָבֶּר עַל הַמִּטַהֵר מִטַּמְאָתוֹ וְאַחַר יִשְׁחַט אֶת הָעֹלָה
- וְהֶעֱלָה הַכֹּהֵן אֶת הָעֹלָה וְאֶת הַמִּוְבַּחָה וְבָבֶּר עְלָיו הַכֹּהֵן וְטָהֵר (14:20)
   (Also in vv. 21, 29, 31 regarding substitution sacrifices)

### House <u>אָר</u>עַת

ושִׁלַח אֶת הַצִּפֹּר הַחַיָּה אֶל מִחוּץ לָעִיר אֶל פְּנֵי הַשָּׁדֶה וְלָפֶר עֵל הַבַּיִת וְטָהֵר (Lev 14:53)

### Abnormal Genital Discharges

- וְעָשָׂה אֹתָם הַכֹּהֵן אֶחָד חַשָּׁאת וְהָאֶחָד עֹלָה וְרָפֶּר עָלָיו הַכֹּהֵן לִפְנֵי יְ־הוָה מִזּוֹבוֹ
- הָאֶחָד חַשָּׁאת וְאֶת הָאֶחָד עֹלָה וְכִבֶּר עָלֶיה הַכּהֵן לִפְנֵי יְ־הוָה מִזּוֹב טֵמְאָתָה (15:30)

### Impure nazirite

...שָׁשָׁה הַכֹּהֵן אֶחָד לְחַשָּׁאת וְאֶחָד לְעֹלָה וְבָפֶּר עָלָיו מֵאֲשֶׁר חָטָא עַל הַנָּפֶשׁ...

The term כְּפֶר is notably absent in the cases of menstrual impurity, corpse contamination, and one-day impurities—i.e., those that do not involve sacrifices. The one exception above where the term כְּפֶר appears in a case without sacrifices is house אָרַעַת. Milgrom suggests that the reason כְּפֶר is used here is so that "the bird ritual for houses should close the same way as its counterpart for persons," such that וְכָבֶּית וְטָהֵר (v. 20) parallels וְכָבֶּר עַלי הַבּיָת וְטָהֵר (v. 53).<sup>327</sup>

### 9.3.1 Interpretations of כְּפֵר

What does קפָר mean, and how does it function in the above cases of impurity? HALOT defines קפָר (*pi 'el*) as appease, make amends, or atone.<sup>328</sup> Milgrom, however, argues that in most cases of סָפֶר, expiation and atonement do not fit. Instead, he renders קפֶר as "purge," noting that in biblical poetry, סָפֶר parallels הַסִיר, "remove" (Isa 27:9), and הַסָּר, "wipe clean" (Jer 18:23), and that in Leviticus 14, הַסִיר מַכָּפֶר accompanies the cleansing terms move". (Jer 18:23), and that in Leviticus 14, הַסִיר מַרָּפָר accompanies the cleansing terms הַכְּפָר מוֹש Milgrom points to potential cognates *kafara* (cover) in Arabic and *kuppuru* (wipe) in Akkadian, both of which connote "rub," either rubbing something on (covering) or rubbing it off (removing/purging). Because the meaning "rub off" predominates in ancient Near Eastern ritual texts, he concludes that הַכָּפֶר impurity means rub off or purge.<sup>330</sup>

Yitzhaq Feder rejects the interpretation of wiping based on the Akkadian *kuppuru*, viewing יפָּרָ instead as carrying the more abstract meaning "expiate." He explains that there is no trace of the concrete sense of wiping in Palestinian Aramaic, that only Mesopotamian dialects employ the dual sense (concrete and abstract), and therefore there is no reason to think the biblical authors meant "wipe" or "rub." As such, יפָּרָ should be understood based on inner-biblical evidence, which according to Feder points to expiation.<sup>331</sup>

<sup>330</sup> Milgrom grants that "rubbing on" may sometimes be the meaning in cases possessing an apotropaic element, such as the doorpost blood rite during the plague of the firstborn (Exod 12:7–23; though notably there is no verb case), or the blood-oil daubing rite of the אָצֶרֶע Regarding the latter rite, he concludes that since the blood is from the שָׁשָׁם, it carries the meaning "expiate"; see J. Milgrom, ibid., p. 1079–1081.

<sup>331</sup> Y. Feder, "On *kuppuru*, *kippēr* and Etymological Sins," pp. 538–541.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>327</sup> J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 882.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>328</sup> S.v. כפר.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>329</sup> J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 1079.

Mary Douglas suggests that "cover," rather than wipe, better matches the meaning of found in purification cases, which are "exemplified by bodily leakages and disease, so clearly not cases in which dirt has to be removed or surfaces polished."<sup>332</sup> Douglas describes the function of esercer, recover, cover again, to repair a hole, cure a sickness, mend a rift, make good a torn or broken covering."<sup>333</sup>

William Propp argues similarly that "cover" is the literal meaning of כְּפֶר הָפֶר He notes that "we normally look to the Qal conjugation for a root's basic meaning" and cites the single biblical instance of a *qal* form, יְכָפֶרְתָּ אֹתָה מְפַיָּת וּמְרוּץ בַּכֹּפֶר or covering with pitch.<sup>334</sup> Propp also points to the word יְכָפֶרְתָּ אֹתָה מִפַּרָת וּמַרוּץ בַּכֹּפֶר denoting cover as well as purification and atonement.<sup>335</sup> Regarding the *pi 'el* ישָׁם, he cites a verse from Jeremiah that is later rephrased by Nehemiah, wherein the word יְכָפֶר וּפּר (Jer 18:23) is replaced by תְּכָפֶר (Neh 3:27), a substitution that suggests the terms are viewed by the latter as synonyms. He also notes that the imagery of "covering" sin is attested in Psalms (Ps 32:1, 5; 85:3). Nonetheless, Propp translates the term יְכָּפֶר clearing," which he explains expresses "cleansing, nullification, reconciliation and the removal of an obstruction."<sup>336</sup>

Baruch Schwartz rejects the proposed connection between כְּפֶר and the Arabic *kafara* (cover), opting instead for the Akkadian *kuppuru* (wipe), used in P either to convey the technical meaning "purge" (when it refers to an object) or the metaphorical meaning "cleanse" (regarding human sin or impurity; e.g., cases of the גאָשָׁם).<sup>337</sup> In addition, he suggests that in some cases the verb כְּפֵר means כְּפֵר "ransom," and that these two types of

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>332</sup> M. Douglas, "Atonement in Leviticus," p. 116.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>333</sup> Ibid., pp. 117–118.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>334</sup> W. H. Propp, *Exodus 19–40*, p. 466.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>335</sup> Ibid., p. 385.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>336</sup> Ibid., pp. 466–467.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>337</sup> See B. J. Schwartz, "Concerning the 'Eating' of Blood," pp. 52–54. However, as observed by the medieval exegetes David Kimhi and Abraham Maimonides, there is a plausible etymological link between the *qal* verb verb, meaning "cover," and p., a "cover" or "lid"; see R. Eichler, *The Ark and the Cherubim*, p. 166.

פָבֶּר merely homographs, not etymologically connected. The "ransom" connotation, Schwartz argues, extends to the phrase לְכַבֵּר עֵל גַפְשׁׁתֵיכֶם (Lev 17:11), regarding blood applied to the altar.<sup>338</sup>

### 9.3.2 Clearing/Covering Liability

Putting aside for the moment whether the verb פָּרָ connotes wiping, covering, expiating, clearing, or cleansing, I would argue that when applied to impure persons, it does not refer to the elimination of impurity itself. As discussed above, individuals are effectively pure even before offering sacrifices. Nonetheless, sacrifices can be viewed as part of purification by distinguishing between two phases: (1) the personal impurity-elimination process, achieved via procedures of washing, waiting, sprinkling, etc., and (2) purity with respect to YHWH, achieved via sacrifice. The term יפָּר pertains only to the latter and connotes, as I proposed earlier, being cleared of liability for a debt.<sup>339</sup> In this sense, "cover," "wipe," or most any proposed etymology for יפָּר

In P's worldview, to be in proximity to YHWH with a liability is dangerous, and it is the job of the priests to effect פָּרָה for the people and protect them from harm. This is illustrated in numerous cases where the term פָּרָר refers to stopping a plague in progress, such as YHWH's wrath in the wake of the Korah rebellion (Num 17:11) or YHWH's plague following the incident at Peor (Num 25:8, 13). Clearing of liability, בְּכָרָה, is also done as a prophylactic, for example to prevent YHWH's plague during a census (Exod 30:12, 15). The phrase הֹכֶר וַכָּשׁוֹ in this case is frequently understood as a person's "ransom,"<sup>340</sup> but I would

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>338</sup> See B. J. Schwartz, "Concerning the 'Eating' of Blood," pp. 54–55.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>339</sup> Frank Gorman understands כְּפֶר as repairing "disruptions" in the relationship between a person and YHWH; see F. H. Gorman, *Divine Presence and Community*, p. 16. Sidney Hills explains that כְּפֶר is an act which overcomes "a break in a relationship between two persons"; see S. O. Hills, *KPR in the Hebrew Old Testament*, p. 287.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>340</sup> See e.g., translations of NJPS, Propp, as well as Schwartz ("Concerning the 'Eating' of Blood").

argue that the payment made here can just as well be framed as a preemptive means of covering individual liabilities that could, collectively, result in danger.

Other times, פָּרָה פָּרָה פּרָזי is performed as a petitionary measure to release people from liability and avoid YHWH's imminent wrath, as in Moses' intercession following the people's golden calf worship (Exod 32:30). Another example from a non-P source concerns Jacob, who is aware of his debt to Esau—as well as his brother's wrath against him—and wishes to clear himself. Jacob says to himself: אָכפְּרָה פָּנָיו בִּמִיְרָה הַהֹלֶכֶת לְפָנֵי וְאַרֵרי כֵן אָרְאָה פָּנָיו אוּלֵי יִשָּׂא , "If I propitiate him with presents in advance, and then face him, perhaps he will show me favor" (Gen 32:21). The term אָכַפְּרָה פָּנֶיו הַנָּפָרָה פָנָיו יִהָנָה הַהֹלֶכָת יִהָנָי יִהנָה is the target of the הַכָּפָרָה פָנָיו אוּלי יִשָּׁא with respect to another, that other signified by their face.

For קפְרָה is part of P's formula, which לְפְנֵי יְהוָה is part of P's formula, which when written in full takes the following form:

- 1. כַּפֵּר עַל
- 2. person/object needing clearing
- 3. person doing the clearing
- לְפְגֵי יְ־הוָה
- 5. from ( $\alpha$ ) the specific liability (impurity or  $\sin^{341}$ ).

An example of the complete formula is וְכָפֶּר עָלָיו הַכֹּהֵן לִפְנֵי יְ־הוָה מִזּוֹבוֹ (Lev 15:15),<sup>342</sup> which I would render as, "And the priest shall clear him of liability before YHWH resulting from his flow." The element לְפְנֵי יְ־הוָה מחש appears in many instances of this כִּפֶר formula<sup>343</sup> but is omitted

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>341</sup> The term יְכָבֶּר אָלָיו הַכֹּהֵן is employed for both sin and impurity using nearly identical language, e.g., וְכָבֶּר אָלָיו הַכֹּהֵן (Lev 5:6, 10) and וְכָבֶר אַל הַמִּטַהֵר מִטַמְאָתוֹ (Lev 14:19).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>342</sup> For a separate discussion of this formula, see R. Gane, *Cult and Character*, p. 116.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>343</sup> See Lev 5:26; 10:17; 14:18, 29, 31; 15:15, 30; 19:22; 23:28; and Num 31:50.

at other times likely because it is assumed. Likewise, the elements "from + liability" are mostly left implicit since the context spells out the cause of the liability.

Regarding sancta in need of purification, impurity presents a liability in the sense that it jeopardizes the continuity of YHWH's presence in the sanctuary and thus among the camp. However, unlike individual purification, where impurity is neutralized prior to כָּפָרָה in the case of cult objects, impurity is neutralized during the act of בְּפָרָה itself—the blood rite (see Ch. 10).

### 9.3.3 Liabilities Covered by the חַשָּׁאת, עֹלָה, and אָשָׁם, and

The purificatory חַטָּאָת, עֹלָה, and אָשָׁם sacrifices are each described in P as agents of פַפַרַה.

- וְסָמַדְ יָדוֹ עַל רֹאשׁ הָעֹלָה וְנְרְצָה לוֹ לְכַמֵּר עָלָיו עֹלָה (Lev 1:4).
- חַשָּאת לָהֶם הַכֹּהֵן וְנִסְלַח לָהֶם הַעַּאָת (Lev 4:20; also 4:26, 31, 35).
- עָלָיו בְּאֵיל הָאָשָׁם וְנִסְלַח לוֹ אָשָׁם (Lev 5:16; also 5:6, 10, 13, 18, 26)

Milgrom suggests that the עֹלָה was the original sacrifice for propitiation and expiation, predating the הְשָׁאת and initially known as the כָּלִיל <sup>345</sup>. In cases of impurity, he explains, the עֹלָה functions in part as a thanksgiving offering (as in Lev 22:18, Num 15:3) and in part as an expiatory offering (as attested by the use of the term וְרָפֶרָ 12:7, 8). Its expiation, he says, "addresses other matters than pollution."<sup>346</sup> Jonathan Grossman proposes that the עֹלָה is required for a person to be able to stand once again before

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>344</sup> This is as opposed to the גָּבַח שְׁלָמִים sacrifice, brought in festive or commemorative contexts, which is not said to effect בפָרָה.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>345</sup> As in אָקָרָל אַתְאָהָלָה לא תַאָרָל אַתַאָהָ (Lev 6:16; also 6:15; Deut 33:10; 1 Sam 7:9); see J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, pp. 172–173. Cf. views in rabbinic literature explaining the עלה as explaining sins not covered by the neglecting to perform a positive command (see t. *Menahot* 10:3) or sins of thought rather than action (*Leviticus Rabbah* 7:3).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>346</sup> See J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, pp. 757–758.

#### 9. Sacrifices

YHWH, compensating for the "distance" between the person and the sacred domain caused by the impurity.<sup>347</sup> I would suggest that perhaps the עָלָה in cases of impurity serves a dual gratitude-expiation role. Specifically, the עָלָה offsets the debt owed for being the undeserving recipient of a good. To survive an ordeal such as childbirth or disease, or to be given a second chance to complete one's term as a nazirite, is an act of divine grace—and one which may leave the recipient feeling that the accounting with YHWH is no longer in their favor. Offering an עָלָה covers the debt of gratitude and gives the offerer peace of mind that they are in good standing with YHWH to receive his continued blessing.

The predominant traditional rendering of the אָרָשָא ווּ is as a "sin-offering," brought for an inadvertent transgression.<sup>348</sup> The case of the nazirite is understandable in this light, since the verse states אָרָשָא עָל הָנָפָּשׁ הָטָא אָל הָנָפָּשׁ הָטָא אָל הַנָּפָשָ inadvertently becoming corpse-contaminated. But what is the "sin" that would require a inadvertently becoming skin הָבָרָע לָלִי מְאָשׁר הָטָא אָל הַנָּפָשָ following skin אָרָעָת childbirth, or an abnormal genital discharge? Biblical narratives cast skin הַשָּא as a punishment—against Miriam for speaking against Moses' Cushite wife (Num 12), against Gehazi for his act of greed and deception (2 Kgs 5), and against Uzziah for asserting priestly prerogatives (2 Chron 26). Yet, priestly legal traditions say nothing of any sin imputed to the הָשָׁרָש.<sup>349</sup> Regarding childbirth and genital discharges, the Bible does not attribute these to transgression, but opinions in rabbinic literature do,<sup>350</sup> presumably on the assumption that a sin-offering must address a sin. Milgrom's proposed rendering of the הָשָׁאָת as a "purification-offering," however, provides a rationale other than sin: The purpose of the

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>347</sup> See J. Grossman, *The Sacrificial Service*, pp. 98–99.

 <sup>&</sup>lt;sup>348</sup> In his 1971 article, Milgrom states, "To my knowledge, all versions and translations, old and new, render the *hațțā't* sacrifice as 'sin offering'"; see J. Milgrom, "Sin-Offering or Purification Offering," p. 237.
 <sup>349</sup> On this point, see J. Klawans, *Impurity and Sin*, p. 25.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>350</sup> The postpartum mother is said to be guilty of violating the rash oath said during childbirth that she would never again have sex with her husband (see b. *Niddah* 31b). Ibn Ezra on Lev 15:14 says regarding the נב that the discharge occurred as punishment for a sin: והקרבן עולה וחטאת בעבור כי הזוב מוסר על עון.

is to cleanse the sancta of impurity transmitted to it from afar.<sup>351</sup> I concur with Milgrom that sanctuary purification is one aspect of the תְּשָׁאת, but I would suggest that perhaps inadvertently contaminating the sanctuary also creates a personal liability, and offering the תְּשָׁאת clears that liability. (This proposal of a dual-function תְּשָׁאת will be discussed in Sec 10.4.2.)

The אָשָׁם, often termed the guilt-offering or reparation-offering, is normally prescribed in cases of sancta trespass (Lev 5:15). Of the impurity cases, only the impure nazirite and the מְצֹרֶע are instructed to offer an אָשָׁם. The nazirite inadvertently defiles a sanctum—their own hair, so the אָשָׁם clearly fits the case. The question is why the מְצֹרֶע needs to bring an אָשָׁם. Milgrom argues that the reason is that the individual "*may* have desecrated sancta" (emphasis his) in the past, and contracting אַרָעָת served as a punishment for doing so. As evidence for this, he cites the depiction in Chronicles of Uzziah contracting אָרַעָת after trespassing the sanctuary.<sup>352</sup>

That the מְעֹרֶע "may" have trespassed sancta, however, seems insufficient to explain the centrality of the מְעֹרֶע in the מְעֹרֶע case, since its blood is used in the elaborate daubing rite (Lev 14:14). Grossman suggests that the מְעֹרֶע of the מְעֹרֶע enables the person to reabsorbed into Israelite society and provides פַפָּרָה for the time he or she was cut off from the sancta and unable to participate in divine service.<sup>353</sup> Hartley points out ways that the procedure in Leviticus 14 is unusual and indicates a unique usage of this sacrifice.<sup>354</sup> As such, perhaps the מעֹרָע of the מְעֹרָע should not be expected to fit the typical mold of sancta trespass. I would suggest that while no doubt (given the term אָשָׁם, "guilt") there is an aspect of personal liability that the sacrifice is presumed to clear, the purpose of this particular and we have the sancta and be and the sacrifice is presumed to clear, the purpose of this particular and the sacrifice is presumed to clear, the purpose of this particular and the sacrifice is presumed to clear.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>351</sup> See J. Milgrom: "Sin-Offering or Purification-Offering?", pp. 237–239; *Leviticus 1–16*, pp. 253–254. See also J. Grossman, *The Sacrificial Service*, p. 255.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>352</sup> See J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, pp. 856–857.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>353</sup> See J. Grossman, *The Sacrificial Service*, pp. 360–361.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>354</sup> See J. E. Hartley, *Leviticus*, comments on 14:12.

closer to the מְלָאִים ram, whose blood is used in a similar daubing rite during priestly consecration (Exod 29:21). Both serve to raise the recipient from a lower to higher status (impure to pure, or pure to holy) by applying life-infusing/replenishing substances—blood and, in the case of the מִצֹרַע oil. (On these substances, see Ch. 10.)

## 9.4 Communal Purification Sacrifices

Thus far, we have discussed sacrifices prescribed as part of an individual's purification process. Sacrifices also accompany several public purification rites:

- *Day of Atonement* Once a year, on the tenth day of the seventh month (Lev 16).
- Priest and Tabernacle consecration and inauguration<sup>355</sup> A one-time, eight-day event (Exod 29; Lev 8–9).
- *Levite dedication* A one-time event (Num 8).

The sacrifices offered are as follows:

Case	Offering	
Day of Atonement (Lev 16)	Priests' offerings: 1 bull (חַפָּאת) 1 ram (עלָה)	People's offerings: 2 male goats (חַטָּאת + Azazel) 1 ram (עֹלָה)
Priests/Tabernacle consecration and inauguration (Exod 29, Lev 8–9)	<u>First day</u> 1 bull (תַּשָּׁאת) 2 rams (עֹלָה + מִלָּאִים) Basket of grain products	<u>All seven days</u> 1 bull (חַטָּאת)

Table 7. Public sacrifices for impurity

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>355</sup> I distinguish here between "consecration" of the Tabernacle and priests, which involves their preparation and official induction (Exod 29, Lev 8), and their "inauguration," which is the ceremonial opening service, the celebratory rite of first use (Lev 9).

Priests/Tabernacle consecration and inauguration (cont.)	<u>Eighth day</u> Priests' offerings: 1 calf (חַשָּאת) 1 ram (עֹלָה)	People's offerings: 1 male goat (חַפָּאת) 1 calf + 1 male lamb (עֹלָה) 1 ox + 1 ram (גְּבַח שְׁלָמִים) Flour with oil (מִנְחָה)
Levite dedication (Num 8)	2 bulls (חַטָּאת + עֹלָה)	

### 9.4.1 Rites of Leviticus 16

The verb פָּרָ appears sixteen times in Leviticus 16, applying to the high priest and his family (vv. 6, 11, 17, 24, 33), to the people at large (vv. 17, 24, 30, 33, 34), and to the sancta (vv. 16, 20, 33). Does פָרָר פר erefer to sin or impurity? Where it comes to people, no mention is made of resolving impurity, only sin (e.g., vv. 21, 30, 34). Moreover, as we have discussed, individual impurity is remedied not by sacrifice but by other purificatory rites. The Azazel goat is said to address the people's sins (v. 21), and the edict of self-denial, mentioned twice (vv. 29 and 31), addresses sins, as clarified by the intervening verse: כָּרָי רְּהָרָר שֶׁרָרֶ רְּהָרָה שָׁרָרָ שֶׁרָרָ שֶׁרָרָ שֶׁרָרָ שָׁרָרָ בָּיָרָם רָבָיָר בָּיָרָם הָצָר יָרָפָר ווווויז (v. 30). Self-denial practices, be they fasting or other acts, purge life-force, a strategy that is relevant to sin. For impurity, the opposite strategy is required: replenishment of life-force. (For more on this distinction, see Sec. 10.4.3.)

Regarding sancta, one verse appears to indicate that the rites of Leviticus 16 clear both impurity and sin: וְכְּבֶּר עַל הַקֹּדֶשׁ מִשָּמְאֹת בְּנֵי יִשְׂרָאֵל וּמִפִּשְׁעֵיהֶם לְכָל חַטּאֹתָם, "Thus he shall purge the shrine of the uncleanness and transgression of the Israelites, whatever their sins" (v. 16). According to Milgrom, sins are capable of defiling the sanctuary at a distance, like

#### 9. Sacrifices

Elsewhere in priestly texts, negligence regarding individual purification is said to contaminate the sancta (Lev 15:31; Num 19:13, 20), and H points to Molech worship, a brazen act of impurity, as another cause of sancta pollution (Lev 20:3). The אָאָר brought by purification candidates, as we suggested earlier, clears the person of liability for inadvertently polluting the sancta. Negligence, brazen impurity, and inadvertent impurity all contribute to sancta pollution. Possibly, then, the phrase הַשָּלְאָל וּמָפָּאָעֵיהָם in v. 16 could refer to two categories of impurity: (1) everyday inadvertent impurities (שָּׁמָאָת ווּ עוֹם) and (2) impurity via sin (בְּשָׁעֵיהָם), due to either negligence or wanton acts. In this framing, the phrase לְכָל מַטּאָת of Leviticus 16 thus pertains to clearing two forms of liability: human sin and sancta impurity.

### 9.4.2 Priest and Tabernacle Consecration

The consecration and inauguration of the priests and Tabernacle likewise employ a three-part פָּבָרָה, applying to the priests (Lev 8:33, 9:7), to the people (Lev 9:7), and to the sancta (Exod 29:36, 37; Lev 8:15). As with Leviticus 16, these sacrifices clear people of sin and the sancta of impurity. Why would new sancta, just manufactured, require ritual

 <sup>&</sup>lt;sup>356</sup> According to Milgrom, this includes inadvertent sins as well as brazen ones; see J. Milgrom, "The Priestly Picture of Dorian Gray," pp. 393–394; *idem, Leviticus 1–16*, pp. 257–258. See also B. A. Levine, *Numbers 21–36*, pp. 377–379. An in-depth discussion of this position, while worthwhile, is outside the scope of this study.
 <sup>357</sup> See J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 1033.

#### 9. Sacrifices

purification? Milgrom cites a rabbinic opinion that they are rendered impure by the builders.<sup>358</sup> However, the text seems to imply that כַּכָּרָה here relates not (only) to resolution of impurity but to sanctification: שִׁרְעָת יָמִים תְּכַפֵּר עַל הַמִזְבֵּח וְקָיָה הַמִזְבֵּח קֹדֶשׁ קָדָשׁ קָדָשׁ קָדָשׁ קַדָשׁ, "Seven days you shall perform בַּכָּרָה upon the altar to consecrate it, and the altar shall become most holy" (Exod 29:37).

Purification from contact with the builders could be done on a one-off basis, whereas this procedure is repeated for seven days. Additionally, the language here expresses not merely purification but also sanctification. Similar language is used in the Leviticus 16 rite: וְהַזֶּה עֶלֶיו מִן הַדָּם בְּאֲצְבֶעוֹ שֶׁבֵע פְּעָמִים וְטָהֵרוֹ וְקַדְּשׁוֹ מַשָּמְאֹת בְּנֵי יִשְׁרָאֵל shall sprinkle on it with his finger seven times. Thus he shall cleanse it of the uncleanness of the Israelites and consecrate it" (Lev 16:19). That the same blood application not only purifies but also sanctifies suggests that purification is not merely purgative—it also fills and replenishes, invests with energy. Purification and sanctification, I would suggest, are two moves along the same continuum of increasing life-force, purification being a move from minus (impure) to neutral (pure), and sanctification being a move from neutral (pure) to plus (holy). (See Sec. 10.3 for further discussion of this proposal.)

#### 9.4.3 Levite Dedication

The dedication of the Levites, though it is a communal event, more closely resembles individual rites of purification. It begins with sprinkling with מֵי חַשָּׁאת, shaving the entire body, and laundering clothes (Num 8:7), procedures for impure persons. The verse is explicitly framed in terms of purity, beginning with אין לְהֶם לְטָהֲרָם לְטָהֲרָם shall do to them to cleanse them" and concluding with the word וְהַשֶּׁהָרוּ, "thus they shall be cleansed." Only once the Levites are pure does the rite turn to the sacrifices, whose purpose is

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>358</sup> J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 521.

על הַלְוָיָם (v. 12), to clear the Levites of any liabilities before YHWH, enabling them to serve safely in the sanctuary. The הַשָּאת and הַשָּאת can be understood here to serve the same function as those offered for individual purification (see Sec. 9.3.3).

#### In sum

For impure individuals who bring sacrifices as part of purification, the sacrifices are offered after personal purification has been achieved, and the person is fit not only to reside in the camp but to enter the sacred precincts. The sacrifices therefore do not purge impurity, nor are they intended to replenish the individual. Instead, the כַּבְרָה function releases a person from liabilities accrued from being the recipient of divine beneficence and from unwittingly polluting the sancta. The blood of these sacrifices applied to sancta, however, does involve an act of replenishment, as we will see ahead.

## 10. Blood and Oil Applications

P prescribes applications of blood and/or oil to persons and sancta in several cases of purification and sanctification. These applications employ a variety of methods: pouring (נָצָק); sprinkling (נָגָרָק), usually with the finger;<sup>359</sup> dashing or hurling (נָצָק), typically a larger amount, using a מְיָרָק silver dashing vessel;<sup>360</sup> daubing (נָצָק), i.e., direct placing with the finger;<sup>361</sup> anointing (מְשָׁח), lit. smearing;<sup>362</sup> spilling/pouring out (נְמָצָה); and draining (נְמָצָה).<sup>363</sup> Two rites involve bodily applications of blood and/or oil:

- *Priests' consecration* The priests are sprinkled with blood and oil (Exod 29:21, Lev 8:30), daubed with blood (Exod 29:20; Lev 8:23–24), and anointed with oil (Exod 28:41; 29:7; 30:30; 40:13, 15; Lev 8:12).
- *Skin אָרָעָת* The מִצֹרָע is daubed blood and oil (Lev 14:14, 17–18, 25, 28–29).

The specific applications to people are as follows:

Rite	Substance	Subject	Method	Verse
Priests'	Anointing oil	Aaron's head	יָצַק	Exod 29:7, Lev 8:12
Consecration		Aaron and his sons	מָשַׁח	Exod 28:41, 30:30, 40:13–15
Blood of מַלָאִים ram		Priests' right ear, right thumb, right big toe	נָתַן	Exod 29:20, Lev 8:23–24

Table 8. Bodily applications of blood and/or oil

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>359</sup> E.g., וְהָזָה עָלָיו מִן הַדָּם בְּאֶצְבָּעוֹ שָׁבַע פְּעָמִים (Lev 16:19). The exception is sprinkling of water formulas, which is done using a hyssop branch (red cow rite) or a bundle of hand-held items (two-bird rite).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>360</sup> See Exod 27:3, 38:3; Num 4:14, and the offerings of the tribes (Num 7); see also HALOT, s.v. מִיָרָק.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>361</sup> The word אָאָבָּע is explicit only in altar daubing but is implied in ear-thumb-big-toe daubing of the priests and מְעֹרָע.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>362</sup> The term וְיָצַקְתָּ אֶת שֶׁמֶן הַמִשְׁחָה וְיָצַקְתָּ עַל ראשו וּמָשַׁחְתָ אתו (Exod 29:7).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>363</sup> Cf. HALOT, s.v. מצה, which defines it as "pressing out." The term מצה occurs in only two places in P (Lev 1:15, 5:9), both in cases of applying bird blood to the altar, where there is too little blood to place in a vessel for dashing; see J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 169.

Rite	Substance	Subject	Method	Verse
Priests' Consecration (cont.)	Anointing oil, blood from the altar	Priests, vestments	<u>ה</u> וָּה	Exod 29:21, Lev 8:30
מְצֹרָע	Blood of אָשָׁם	Right ear, right thumb, right big toe of מְצֹרָע	נָתַן	Lev 14:14, 25
	Oil in right hand	Right ear, right thumb, right big toe of מְצֹרָע	נָתַן	Lev 14:17, 28
		Head of מְצֹרָע	ۯؘٮۧۯ	Lev 14:18, 29

Outside of P, an additional case of blood application to persons is found in the covenant ceremony (Exod 24), where Moses dashes blood from the גָּבַח שְׁלָמִים and גָּבַח שְׁלָמִים at the people, referring to it as דָם הַבְּרִית "blood of the covenant" (v. 8).

More frequently in P, we find instructions for blood applications to various sancta,

most commonly the outer altar, but on certain occasions items in the sanctuary interior:

Sanctum	Application	Method	Sacrifice/Rite	Verse
Outer altar	Dash on sides	זָרַק	עֹלָה	Lev 1:5, 11
			זֶבַח שְׁלָמִים	Lev 3:2, 8, 13
			אָשָׁם	Lev 7:2
			מִלָּאִים	Exod 29:16, 20; Lev 8:15, 19, 24
	Drain on wall	נִמְצָה	עלָה (bird)	Lev 1:15
	Daub on horns	נָתַן	חַטָּאת	Lev 4:25, 30, 34
	Pour out at base	יָצַק, שָׁפַדְ	חַטָּאת	Lev 4:7, 25, 30, 34
	Sprinkle on wall	ករ្ភ	אָשָׁם (bird)	Lev 5:9
	Drain at base	נִמְצָה	אָשָׁם (bird)	Lev 5:9
Incense altar	Daub on horns	נָתַן	חַשָּאת of the priest, community	Lev 4:7, 15
	Sprinkle 7x	ករ្ភក	חַטָאת of Lev 16	Lev 16:19
Before the curtain	Sprinkle 7x	הַזָּה	חַשָּאת of the priest, community	Lev 4:6, 17
Ark cover	Sprinkle 7x	ភរ្ិក	חַטָאת of Lev 16	Lev 16:14–15

Table 9. Blood applications to sancta

Sanctum	Application	Method	Sacrifice/Rite	Verse	
Toward Tent of Meeting	Sprinkle 7x	កុរ្	Red cow <u>ח</u> פָאת	Num 19:4	

In two cases, oil is applied to sancta:

Table 10. Oil applications to sancta

Sanctum	Application	Method	Rite	Verse
Tabernacle and vessels	Anoint	מָשַׁח	Consecration	Lev 1:5, 11
Toward YHWH	Sprinkle 7x	ករុះក	מְצֹרָע purification	Lev 3:2, 8, 13

How are blood and oil viewed in the Bible, and what is their role in P's purification and sanctification rites?

## 10.1 Blood: The Life-Force

The Pentateuch links blood to  $\psi_{\mathfrak{Y}}$ , a word that has a range of meanings in the Bible: throat (cf. Akk. *napištu*), neck, breath, living being, person, personality, life, and the locus of feelings and perceptions.<sup>364</sup> It is thought that "throat/appetite" may have been the original meaning of  $\psi_{\mathfrak{Y}}$ , which then extended to breath, a sign of life, and to blood, another life substance.<sup>365</sup> The extension of  $\psi_{\mathfrak{Y}}$  from breath to blood may have also been pragmatically motivated, since blood is more tangible than breath and thus easier to manipulate in cultic rituals, including purification.<sup>366</sup> The lexical pair "blood" and "life" is attested in Hebrew,

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>364</sup> See HALOT, s.v. גַפָּשׁ.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>365</sup> See J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 17–22*, p. 1472.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>366</sup> See E. Gerstenberger, *Leviticus*, comment: "Atonement" (Lev 4–5). Says Milgrom, "it became inevitable that a similar equation would develop between *nepeš* and blood, the other life-containing organ" (J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 17–22*, p. 1472).

Ugaritic, and Akkadian poetry,<sup>367</sup> a linkage that stems from an ancient belief that pulsating blood is the locus of life.<sup>368</sup> More than just symbolizing life, blood is thought to *be* life,<sup>369</sup> and even after an animal is slaughtered, blood is considered potent and full of latent life.<sup>370</sup>

Regarding sancta purification, Milgrom suggests that blood acts as a ritual detergent<sup>374</sup> and that its cleansing properties derive from blood being "life."<sup>375</sup> Hartley says similarly that "blood has cleansing power because it carries an animal's life-force."<sup>376</sup> I would add that the application of blood/life-force both drives out impure forces and (to

<sup>368</sup> See J. Scullion, "The Genesis Narrative." Wenham says that blood is identified with life, since "a beating heart and a strong pulse are the clearest evidence of life" (G. J. Wenham, *Genesis 1–15*, comment on 9:4). <sup>369</sup> William Gilders argues, "Blood, therefore, is not a symbol of life, if by symbol one means something that merely stands for its referent. Blood really *is* life" (W. K. Gilders, *Blood Ritual in the Hebrew Bible*, p. 18). <sup>370</sup> See M. Vervenne, "The Blood Is the Life," pp. 451–470.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>367</sup> See Y. Avishur, *Stylistic Studies of Word-Pairs*, pp. 559, 577. Avishur is cited in E. A. Speiser, *Genesis*, comment on 9:4.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>371</sup> See R. E. Friedman, *Bible with Sources Revealed*, p. 46.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>372</sup> Wenham's translation; see G. J. Wenham, *Genesis 1–15*. Others who translate "its blood, its life" include R.

E. Friedman, Bible with Sources Revealed, p. 46; W. H. Propp, Exodus 19–40, p. 233; E. Fox, The Five Books of Moses, p. 42. Cf. NJPS and Speiser (Genesis), who render בָּשָׁר בְּנֵפָשׁ as "life-blood."

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>373</sup> Wenham paraphrases "flesh with its life, i.e., its blood" and explains that the word דָמוֹ is in "apposition to and explaining" נָּמָשוֹ; see G. J. Wenham, *Genesis 1–15*, comment on 9:4.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>374</sup> See e.g., J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 254.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>375</sup> Ibid., pp. 711–712.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>376</sup> J. Hartley, *Leviticus*, comment on 17:11.

borrow Douglas' language) "repairs the hole" or "mends the rift" left by the deathly presence. That blood rites do not merely purge but also convey life-force to the recipient is reinforced by P's parallel applications of oil, which as we will see is a substance used not to purge but to invigorate and elevate.

## 10.2 Oil: Vitalizing and Renewing

Ceremonial anointing with oil in the Bible typically accompanies an elevation in status, as in the appointment of kings (e.g., 1 Sam 10:1, 16:13; 1 Kgs 1:39; 2 Kgs 9:3), the induction of priests (e.g., Exod 29:7, Lev 8:12), and the consecration of cultic or ceremonial objects (e.g., Gen 28:18, 35:14; Exod 40:9; Lev 8:10). A rise in status accompanied by oil anointment is attested in Mesopotamia as well, not only in conferring priesthood and kingship but also in releasing individuals from a bond, such as merchants relieved of royal obligations or prostitutes released from their duties.<sup>377</sup>

The priestly anointing oil, made from crushed olives, is infused with several spices, detailed in Exod 30:23–24—by proportion: myrrh (2 units), aromatic cinnamon (1 unit), aromatic cane (1 unit), and cassia (2 units). The psalmist pictures a lavish amount of oil used in Aaron's anointment, running down onto his beard and collar (Ps 133:2). The anointing oil is also called שָׁדָש, "holy."<sup>378</sup> P states the purpose of Moses pouring oil on Aaron's head: is also called שָׁדָש, "holy."<sup>378</sup> P states the purpose of Moses pouring oil on Aaron's head: יקדָשׁ הוא וּבְּנְדִי וּבְנְדִי וְבָנְדִי בְנָיִי , "and he anointed him, to consecrate him" (Lev 8:12). The anointing oil is subsequently combined with blood from the altar (from the מָלָאִים ram) and sprinkled on Aaron and his sons' bodies and clothing, where the text states: יְקַדָשׁ הוּא וּבְנָדִי וְבָנָדִי וְבָנָדִי בְנָיִי , "Thus shall he and his vestments be holy, as well as his sons and his sons' vestments" (Exod 29:21). Blood and oil combine to render the priests שׁׁזָדָש. As mentioned earlier,

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>377</sup> See D. Fleming, "The Biblical Tradition of Anointing Priests," p. 406.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>378</sup> See Exod 30:25, 31; 30:29; Num 35:25; also Ps 85:21.

Wenham and Milgrom both link holiness to "life" (see Sec. 2.3). We previously discussed blood, which is the life force. Perhaps oil, too, is a substance thought to convey vitality and thus be an apt pair along with blood to confer holiness.

Gerstenberger explains that ceremonial anointing developed from everyday customs and that oil in the Bible "symbolizes life, well-being, health," and is used as part of hygienic practices.<sup>379</sup> When David finishes mourning over his son, he bathes, anoints himself with oil, and puts on fresh clothes (2 Sam 12:20; see also 2 Sam 14:2, Ezek 16:9, Ruth 3:3). Anointing is thus used as part of the same refreshing/revitalizing complex as bathing and laundering. It is also associated with eating and satiety (Deut 31:20, Ps 23:5, 2 Chron 28:15). On the properties of oil, Cornelis Houtman states:

application of anointing oil refreshes a person, restores vitality, and produces a feeling of well-being and self-confidence... In case of sickness, it can reinvigorate him or her and numb pain... Therefore one forgoes anointing oneself with oil in time of mourning... "Applying ointment" has an energizing and cleansing effect... and it can revive and renew a person, remake him or her as it were into another, a new human being.<sup>380</sup>

In everyday contexts, oil is part of wellness and refreshment. In ceremonial contexts, it is a substance used in elevations of status. But these are not two entirely separate functions—ceremonial use is thought to derive from everyday practices. As such, I would suggest that perhaps it is the vitalizing, renewing properties of oil that make it a particularly suitable substance for the status-elevation rites of ceremonial induction and consecration.

## 10.3 Parallel Ear, Thumb, and Big Toe Daubing Rites

The induction of priests includes a daubing ritual where blood from the מָלָאִים ram is placed on the right ears, thumbs, and big toes of Aaron and his sons (Exod 29:21). A similar

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>379</sup> See E. Gerstenberger, *Leviticus*, comment: "The Rites" (14:1–32).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>380</sup> C. Houtman, *Exodus: Volume 3*, p. 523, quoted in W. H. Propp, *Exodus 19–40*, p. 451.

rite is performed in the purification of the מְצֹרֲע , where blood from the אָשָׁם lamb is applied to the right ear, thumb, and big toe of the מְצֹרֶע (Lev 14:14, 25), followed by oil placed in the same locations on top of the blood (vv. 17, 28). The remainder of the oil in the priest's hand is placed on the head of the מְצֹרֶע (vv. 18, 29), another element with a parallel in the high priest's consecration rite (Exod 29:7).<sup>381</sup>

Milgrom likens the ear, thumb, and big toe daubing rite to applying blood to the horns of the altar. He suggests that these extremities represent the "vulnerable" parts, i.e., the parts most at risk of contracting impurity, and that the common denominator between the daubing rites of the priests and the מִצֹרְע is that they are "purgative and apotropaic."<sup>382</sup> However, there is no language of purification in Exod 29. Grossman suggests that the two rites represent a move from outside to inside, closer to YHWH's presence—the מִצֹרְע being allowed to fully reenter the camp, and the priests being allowed to serve in the sanctuary.<sup>383</sup> The fact that the move from outside to involve oil, and that it is also the case most explicitly framed in terms of exclusion and readmission, gives strength to Grossman's position. I would add that the inward movement in both cases represents an elevation in status, and the nature of that elevation, I suggest, can be better understood when we account for the tonifying properties of blood and oil. Namely, the two daubing rites are thought to confer added vitality upon the subject.<sup>384</sup>

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>381</sup> A thorough discussion of the מְלָאִים rites is beyond the scope of this study. Pertinent questions that arise include: What do anointing with oil and the מְלָאִים ram accomplish, and how are the goals of these two elements distinct? For a recent analysis and bibliography, see J. Grossman and E. Hadad, "The Ram of Ordination and Qualifying the Priests to Eat Sacrifices," JSOT 45 (2021), pp. 476–492.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>382</sup> See J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, pp. 528–529.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>383</sup> See J. Grossman, *The Sacrificial Service*, pp. 360–361.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>384</sup> According to S. David Sperling, "The similarities in the two rites stem from their common purpose, which is to change the status of the affected persons and thus confer on them new life" (S. D. Sperling, "Blood").

#### 10. Blood and Oil Applications

Propp avers that the rite "raises one's state of purity, making the impure pure and the already pure super-pure."<sup>385</sup> I would adjust this by saying that it makes the impure pure and the pure *holy*. Both involve an upward move along the same continuum:

**Impurity** (-)  $\rightarrow \rightarrow \rightarrow \rightarrow$  **Purity** ( $\emptyset$ )  $\rightarrow \rightarrow \rightarrow \rightarrow$  **Holiness** (+) (*Purify* +) (*Sanctify* +)

Figure 2. Purity-holiness continuum

In this schema, impurity represents a deficit of life-force, a "minus." Purity is a neutral state, but relative to impurity it is fullness of life-force, whole and complete. Holiness is a high-lifeforce state, above normal, more intense and concentrated. Transformation from impure to pure and from pure to holy both involve adding life-force, "plus." Purification is an act of replenishment, of making whole, whereas sanctification is an act that intensifies, imbues with added vitality commensurate with nearness to YHWH's presence. Thus, the parallel daubing rites of the מִצֹרֶע and priests can perhaps be understood as catalyzing a move along the lifeforce continuum: for the מִצֹרָע, a move from impure to pure, and for the priests, a move from pure to holy. As such, blood and oil can be agents of purification as well as sanctification.

## 10.4 Meaning of the Term הְטָא

In the consecration of the Tabernacle, the verb חְמָא (*pi 'el*) is used to describe the blood-daubing rite on the horns of the altar (וְיָחַטֵּאתָ עֵל הַמִּזְבַח, Exod 29:36; וְיָחַטֵּא אֶת הַמִּזְבַח, Exod 29:36; וְיָחַטֵּא אֶת הַמִּזְבַח, Lev 8:15). What does this term convey? HALOT renders it "cleanse from sin, purify" (with the *hitpa 'el* form הַתְחַטָּא meaning "purify oneself"). Propp translates הַמָּחַטָּא as "un-sin,"

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>385</sup> W. H. Propp, *Exodus 19–40*, p. 530.

meaning to remove sin.<sup>386</sup> Milgrom suggests "cleanse, expurgate, decontaminate," as distinct from the *qal* form meaning "sin."<sup>387</sup>

The term הְשָא/הְתְחַטָּא occurs fourteen times in P, in the following cases:

Case	Substance	Subject	Verse
Tabernacle Consecration	Blood	Altar	Exod 29:36; Lev 8:15
House אָרַעַת	Water-blood mixture	House	Lev 14:49, 52
Levite dedication	מֵי חַטָּאת	Levites	Num 8:21
Corpse contamination	מֵי נִדָּה	People, tent, vessels	Num 19:12 [x2], 13, 19, 20; 31:19, 20, 23

Table 11. Instances of הְשֵׁא/הִתְחַטָּא in P

Regarding Tabernacle consecration (Exod 29 and Lev 8), nowhere is there any mention of either sin or impurity, so there is no explicit reference as to what the verb עיד is targeting. However, given that ten instances of מָרָארְהָתְהַטָּא involve the sprinkling of יש מי גערעת to purify from corpse contamination,<sup>388</sup> and two others relate to house גָרְעָת חָשָּאר another form of impurity, it stands to reason that the verb מָיָא in the consecration rite targets impurity rather than sin. Furthermore, all these cases make use of life-force-imbuing ingredients, whether blood itself in the altar-daubing rite, or מָיָש and blood-based formulas in the cases of the red cow and two-bird sprinkling rites. While life purges the forces of death, and הַטָּאר/הַתְּתָשָּא/הַתְתָשָּא/הַמָּמָשָא/הָמָש could refer to the act of purgation, life also "adds life." I suggest that autor adding, strengthening, and reinforcing—conveying "plus" to transform the subject from impure to pure, or from pure to holy.<sup>389</sup>

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>386</sup> See W. H. Propp, *Exodus 19–40*, p. 469; see also J. Barr, "Sacrifice and Offering," p. 874.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>387</sup> See J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 253; see also D. P. Wright, "Day of Atonement."

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>388</sup> On the equation of מֵי חַטָּאת with מֵי נְדָה, see Sec. 8.6.3.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>389</sup> The verb אָנְכָי אֲחַטָּנָה implying "adding" may be also understood in the phrase אָנכִי אֲחַטָּנָה (Gen 31:39), conveying restoration or compensation (Raanan Eichler, personal communication).

### 10.4.1 Common Thread Between הַטָא and הַטָא and הַטָא

The terms אָפָא and הָפָא are typically characterized as disconnected concepts, "sin" and "purify," or even as opposites, "sin" and "un-sin." But if אָפָא is understood as adding plus, this in fact converges with the biblical idea of אָרָאָ, sin. The original meaning of אָרָאָ קסא imply "miss a mark" (e.g., Judg 20:16, Prov 8:36), but the predominant biblical characterization of א burden borne by the sinner. The Bible uses various metaphors for describing sin, the most common of which is "weight,"<sup>390</sup> imagery that is thought to stem from ancient Near Eastern iconography depicting worshippers, vassals, and prisoners bearing heavy loads.<sup>391</sup> The weight metaphor is seen in terminology accompanying sin, such as sin being described as <sup>392</sup>, "heavy" (Gen 41:31), גָדֹלָה, "large" (e.g., Gen 20:9; Exod 32:21; 2 Kgs 17:21), use of the preposition אָ sin being "upon" a person,<sup>392</sup> and frequent use of the verb אָנָא, describing sin as something "carried" or "borne" by the person (e.g., <sup>393</sup> appearing in both P and H, and applying to the term jw as well as אָרָי is an a person as an unwanted "plus." When the sin is pardoned, the weight is lifted, the plus off-loaded.

In this sense, the terms חַטָּא and חַטָּא in P both convey the concept of "plus," something extra, additional, supplemental. What differentiates them is that a מַיָּטָא refers to an unwanted plus in need of purging, while הַפָּא is to imbue with a needed plus, either restoring life-force to that which is impure, or supplementing vitality to persons and objects in the sacred realm. Related terminology can be understood similarly: The מֵי חַטָּאת supplies a plus,

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>390</sup> Gary Anderson notes that weight predominates six to one over other metaphors for sin; see G. A. Anderson, *Sin: A History*, p. 17.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>391</sup> See J. Lam, *Patterns of Sin in the Hebrew Bible*, p. 16.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>392</sup> As in, פִי הֵבֵאתָ עָלַי וְעַל מַמְלַכְתִּי חֲטָאָה (Gen 20:9).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>393</sup> See J. Lam, *Patterns of Sin*, p. 43.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>394</sup> See. B. J. Schwartz, "The Bearing of Sin in the Priestly Literature," pp. 3–21.

i.e., life-force replenishment and strengthening, to people and objects contaminated from corpses, and the תְּשָׁאת offering can be understood as a "plus" sacrifice.

## 10.4.2 Sin-Offering and Purification-Offering

Milgrom explains that the term נְשָׁאָת is derived from the *pi* '*el* form and not the *qal*, justifying his translation "purification-offering" rather than "sin-offering," and argues that it purifies the sanctuary but does not resolve the offerer's sin.<sup>395</sup> However, this argument has its difficulties. The word נְשָׁאָת itself in many instances means "sin,"<sup>396</sup> and the etymology of the word שָׁאָת points to "sin."<sup>397</sup> Also, the basic instruction of the מַשָּׁאָת sacrifice is built around cases of sin.<sup>398</sup> Milgrom explains that it is the "effect" of sin on the sanctuary that the מַשָּׁאָת helps to resolve, not the sin itself residing within the offerer. Sin, he says, is absolved through feelings of remorse,<sup>399</sup> indicated by the term שָׁשָׁש (Lev 4:13, 22, 27).<sup>400</sup> But if that were the case, we would expect mention of me basic instruction (Lev 4:1–12 or 15:22–31).<sup>401</sup>

Further, verses such as אָרָאָלָי הַכּהֵן מֵחַטָּאתוֹ, "Thus the priest shall make expiation on his behalf for his sin" (Lev 4:26), point to the offerer as the locus of action for the verb <sup>402</sup> Thus, as much as Milgrom's theory helps to explain some otherwise difficult-tounderstand cases where a חַטָּאת is prescribed (e.g., childbirth, genital discharge, and גָּרְעַת), to

<sup>398</sup> See Lev 4, e.g., וְהָקְרִיב עַל חַטָּאתוֹ אֲשֶׁר חָטָא פַּר בֶּן בָּקָר תָּמִים לַי־הוָה לְחַטָּאת (v. 3); also see Num 15:22–30.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>395</sup> See J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, pp. 253–254; *idem*, "Sin-Offering or Purification-Offering?", pp. 237–239. <sup>396</sup> E.g., Gen 4:7, 18:20; Exod 10:17, 30:10.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>397</sup> See J. Lam, "On the Etymology of Biblical Hebrew חָטאָת," pp. 325–346.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>399</sup> Says Milgrom, "The inadvertent offender needs forgiveness not because of his act per se—as indicated above, his act is forgiven because of the offender's inadvertence and remorse—but because of the consequence of his act" (J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, p. 256).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>400</sup> Milgrom explains, "The fact that his sin is inadvertent (*bisegãgãh*) and that he feels guilty (*weāšēm*) means that he has undergone inner purification" (J. Milgrom, "Priestly Picture of Dorian Gray," p. 390).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>401</sup> Gary Anderson points out this objection; see G. A. Anderson, "Sacrifice and Sacrificial Offerings (OT)." Also, the pairing of אָשָׁם and אָשָׁם further points to הַשָּׁאת having a "sin" connotation; see J. W. Watts, *Ritual and Rhetoric in Leviticus*, pp. 88, 92; see also J. Lam, "Etymology," p. 341.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>402</sup> See R. Gane, *Cult and Character*, pp. 106–122. As further proof, Gane notes similar prepositional use regarding impurity, e.g., וְכָבֶּר עֵל הַמַטַהֵר מָטַמְאָתוֹ (Lev 14:19); see ibid., pp. 112–116.

interpret the תְּשָׁאת as referring exclusively to purification of the sanctuary and not helping to resolve a person's sin is problematic on multiple grounds. Interpreting the תְּשָׁאת as a "plus" sacrifice, however, incorporates "sin" as well as "purification" and can be understood to address both the offerer and the sanctuary, in two stages of the rite.<sup>403</sup>

In the first stage of the חַשָּׁאת sacrifice, the offerer purges הַחָּשָׁא, offloads sin or unwanted "plus." One way this is accomplished is through the hand-leaning rite. The function of the rite is much-debated; among the views are hand-leaning signifying ownership of the animal,<sup>404</sup> indicating substitution of the animal for the person,<sup>405</sup> and being a rite of transference from the offerer to the animal.<sup>406</sup> Propp contends that transference is "the most obvious interpretation."<sup>407</sup> I would suggest that transference constitutes the first part of the ngwn, the individual's offloading of sin/plus.

The second stage of the תְּשָׁאת involves the תְּשָׁא component.<sup>408</sup> When the animal is slaughtered, its blood (life-force) is drained out and applied to the sancta. Albert Baumgarten compares the תְשָׁאת to the purification rites of bathing or laundering, describing it as a rite of "empowerment," done "to restore force to the altar."<sup>409</sup> I consider this an apt description of

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>403</sup> Gane likewise posits a two-stage מָטָאת rite, but (1) he characterizes the second stage as removing *sin* from the sanctuary rather than removing impurity (ibid., p. xx), and (2) he says that the second stage occurs just once a year on the Day of Atonement (ibid., pp. 274–276). Blood applications throughout the year, according to Gane, "result in contamination of the entire outer altar and outer sanctum," which blood applications on the Day of Atonement come to purify (ibid., pp. 180–181; cf. Propp's metaphor of the sanctuary as an "antacid" for absorption of transgressions; see W. H. Propp, *Exodus 19–40*, pp. 449–450). I would argue that not only is blood not contaminating—otherwise it would be drained outside the camp and not allowed near the sanctuary, let alone be placed on the altar—but it is the quintessential life-substance, and as such it serves to replenish the sancta.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>404</sup> See e.g., D. P. Wright, "The Gesture of Hand Placement," pp. 433–446; J. Milgrom, *Leviticus 1–16*, pp. 150–153.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>405</sup> See e.g., N. Kiuchi, *The Purification Offering in the Priestly Literature*, pp. 116–119. This interpretation strikes me as unlikely, since hand-leaning is also used for the אָשָׁה רֵיחַ נְיָהוָה לֵיהוָה (Lev 1:9, 13, 17), and to have a human being symbolized as a "food gift" and a "pleasing aroma to YHWH" seems counterintuitive, if not perverse.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>406</sup> Gerstenberger explains it as "transfer of sin through hand leaning"; see E. Gerstenberger, *Leviticus*, comment on 1:3–9.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>407</sup> At the same time, Propp does not view the different explanations as being mutually exclusive; see W. H. Propp, *Exodus 19–40*, pp. 457–458.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>408</sup> The הַשָּאת is in fact the only sacrifice where the verb הַשָּאת is employed (Exod 29:36, Lev 8:15).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>409</sup> A. I. Baumgarten, "Hatta't Sacrifices," pp. 339–340.

the second stage of the חַשָּאת, where blood endows the altar with added life-force, countering the effects of deathly forces that have accrued on it. Thus, in these two stages, the חַשָּאת sacrifice functions both to purge unwanted plus (מָטָא) from the offerer and to impart needed plus (מָטָא) to the sancta by means of the blood rite.

What happens to the sin in the transfer process? According to Roy Gane, the sin is transferred to the animal and its blood, which proceeds to defile the sanctuary and is rectified only on the Day of Atonement.<sup>410</sup> However, it seems to me that deliberate defilement of sancta would be inconceivable to P, whose concern is constant vigilance for maintaining the sanctuary's purity and sanctity. Blood applications to the sancta should therefore be expected to purify the sanctuary, not defile it. I would suggest that there are two possibilities for what happens to the sin: One is that it is transferred to the animal, whose death cancels out the sin, such that the blood applied to the sancta is pure. The second possibility is that sin is considered by P to simply be excess/misplaced life-force. Thus, once it leaves the offerer, it ceases at that point to be sin and instead is life-force that can be used for other purposes— in this case, infusing the <code>mywn</code> blood and making it all the more potent and capable of replenishing the sancta. This latter view casts the <code>mywn</code> as a rite of recycling, taking energy that is burdensome and destructive, and converting it into useful, life-giving energy, put to the service of the community.

#### 10.4.3 Impurity and Sin: Minus and Plus

There are two types of liability in P, both of which need clearing (פַּבְרָה)—the "minus" variety, impurity, and "plus" variety, sin. To cancel out a minus and restore purity requires a counteracting plus. This is achieved by rites designed to replenish, refresh, and restore life-force—rites on which we have focused throughout this study. To cancel out a plus requires

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>410</sup> See R. Gane, *Cult and Character*, pp. 180–181.

precisely the opposite strategy—acts that function as a minus, which purge,<sup>411</sup> pay out, offload, or burn off life-force. This includes sacrifices, self-denial,<sup>412</sup> monetary restitution,<sup>413</sup> donations,<sup>414</sup> and even suffering.<sup>415</sup>

$$\begin{array}{cccc} \text{Impurity } (-) & \to \to \to & \to & \text{Purity } (\emptyset) & \to \to \to & \to & \text{Holiness } (+) \\ & & (Add +) & \uparrow & (Add +) \\ & & \uparrow & (Offload -) \\ & & \uparrow & \\ & & & \text{Sin } (+) \end{array}$$

Figure 3. Purification and sanctification

The goal for most individuals is to reach purity, the neutral state, either cancelling out the minus of impurity by adding/replenishing, or cancelling out the plus of sin by offloading/purging. Once pure, priests (and other sancta) can become sanctified by further adding/infusing. In this schema, sin and holiness both constitute a "plus," additional lifeforce, but they are two very different states. Sin is an unhealthy excess, extra energy weighing on the person, experienced as something כָּבֶר (heavy, burdensome), where offloading comes as a relief. Holiness, however, is bounty, concentration of life-force, a

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>411</sup> Purification from impurity also involves purgation, but in the case of impurity it is expelling a foreign entity. In the wake of sin, however, purgation involves drawing from one's own life-force.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>412</sup> As in, ענה אָת נְכָשׁתֵיכֶם (Lev 16:29; see also 16:31; 23:27, 29, 32). HALOT renders א ע.נ.ה as "oppress" (with ע.נ.ה meaning "castigate oneself"; s.v. II ענה און א ע.נ. א א ע.נ. א א א א א א א א א א א א גענון גענון א גענון א גענון גענון גענון גענון א גענון גענון

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>413</sup> Material possessions, too, form a part of a person's vitality, their life-force stores. Withdrawing from one's assets is thus a way of resolving the "plus" of sin—not only as a purge but as a just transfer to one who has been wronged.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>415</sup> Punishment and suffering are ways of exacting "payment" for wrongs. The greater the sin, the more life-force must be burnt off by means of suffering. For instance, the curses of Lev 26 conclude: אָז יְכָנֵע לְבָבֶם הֶעָרל אָז יְכָנֵע לְבָבָם הֶעָרל (v. 41). Joseph Lam argues that ר.צ.ה in the context of punishment means "pay back," in this case repaying sin by being exiled and punished by YHWH; see J. Lam, "Sin Is a Debt that Must Be Repaid."

high-intensity state that manifests as call of splendor, gravitas),<sup>416</sup> wherein energy is properly channeled and focused. Impurity and holiness cannot coexist—the former erodes the latter. Impurity and sin, however, can reside simultaneously within the same person, where the deathly force must be countered with an infusion of life, and at the same time a sin requires offloading.

#### In sum

Whether applied to individuals or sancta, blood and oil are vivifying substances intended to boost the life-level of the subject, transforming them from impure to pure, or from pure to holy. Thus, they function to add, replenish, and make whole. Blood is the quintessential "life" substance, and oil is a vitalizer and tonifier used in elevations of status. The concept of adding or imbuing with "plus" is implied by the verb הְמָא , and this idea extends to the terms הְמָא and הֵמָא Consequently, הַמָּא is a state of plus that is negated by offloading, whereas שֵׁמָאָה is a state of minus that is negated by replenishing.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>416</sup> As in, וְעַדְתִּי שָׁמָה לְבְגֵי יִשְׂרָאֵל וְנְקָדֵּשׁ בְּכְבֹדִי (Exod 29:43), wherein the Tabernacle is made אָבָזי שׁמָה לְבְגַי יִשְׂרָאֵל וְנָקָדֵּשׁ בְּכְבֹדִי, and יְבוֹדוֹ (Isa 6:3), where due to YHWH being intensely הָדוֹשׁ קִדוֹשׁ יְהוָה אָבָאוֹת מְלֹא כָל הָאָרֶץ בְּבוֹדוֹ.

## 11. Conclusions

The authors of P understand impurity to be a deathly, underworldly force. This association of impurity with death owes not to the nature of P's cases but to the widespread belief in the ancient world that impurity stems from demonic forces. P omits any demonic attribution but nonetheless acknowledges impurity's dark potency, afflicting both people and sancta. Thus, impurity must either be avoided or—when it is an inescapable or necessary part of life—scrupulously tended to in accordance with P's purification rites. The leitmotif of life abundantly attested in these rites reveals P's strategy for purification: Life is used as a remedy for deathly forces.

Is purification purgative or regenerative? I contend that it is both. As reinvigoration and replenishment are introduced, the deathly force of impurity is purged. This is accomplished through natural processes of healing as well as through purificatory procedures: Auspicious time markers and typological numbers help to dissipate impurity's potency and replenish life-force. Rites of washing and laundering purge as well as invigorate and refresh, helping a person emerge feeling renewed as they are readmitted into their lives and communities. Shaving and haircutting are primarily purgative rites but can also convey cultic dedication. The use of blood, מָיִם חָיִים, oil, and other vitalizing ingredients repel and drive out impure forces as well as replenish the life-force of those who are severely impure. Purificatory sacrifices clear people of different forms of liability, with the הַשָּאַת having a dual function of purging the offerer and restoring the vitality of the sacred precincts, ensuring the continuity of the divine presence.

## Bibliography

All electronic editions accessed through Olive Tree Bible Software, v. 6.1.1.1994.

- G. A. Anderson, "Sacrifice and Sacrificial Offerings (OT)," *ABD*, Electronic Edition, New York: Yale University Press, 1992.
  - Sin: A History, New Haven: Yale University Press, 2009.
- Y. Avishur, *Stylistic Studies of Word-Pairs in Biblical and Ancient Semitic Literatures*, AOAT 210, Neukirchen-Vluyn: Butzon & Bercker, 1984.
- N. Ayali-Darshan, "The Background of the Cedar Forest Tradition in the Egyptian Tale of the Two Brothers in the Light of West-Asian Literature," *Ägypten und Levante / Egypt and the Levant* 27 (2017), pp. 183–194.

— "Scapegoat: The Origins of the Crimson Thread," *TheTorah.com* (2020),

https://thetorah.com/article/scapegoat-the-origins-of-the-crimson-thread.

- J. Barr, "Sacrifice and Offering," in *Dictionary of the Bible*, Second Edition, F. C. Grant and H. H. Rowley (eds.), Edinburgh: T&T Clark, 1963, pp. 868–876.
- A. Bertholet, Leviticus (KHC 3); Leipzig: Mohr, 1901.
- S. Bertman, *Handbook to Life in Ancient Mesopotamia*, New York: Oxford University Press, 2003.
- S. Bhayro and C. Rider, *Demons and Illness from Antiquity to the Early-Modern Period*, Leiden: Brill, 2017.
- J. A. Black, A. R. George, J. N. Postgate, T. Breckwoldt (eds.), *A Concise Dictionary of Akkadian*, Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz, 1999.
- A. M. Blackman, "Purification (Egyptian)," in *Encyclopedia of Religion and Ethics*, New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1919, Vol. 10, pp. 476–482.
- J. Blenkinsopp, Isaiah 1–39 (AB 19), Electronic Edition, New York: Doubleday, 2000.
- A. Brenner-Idan, Colour Terms in the Old Testament, Sheffield: JSOT Press, 1982.
- M. Buber, Prophetic Faith, New York: Harper & Row, 1960.
- D. L. Christensen, *Deuteronomy 21:10-34:12* (WBC 6B), Electronic Edition, Dallas: Word Books, 1997.
- M. Cogan, 1 Kings (AB 10), Electronic Edition, New York: Doubleday, 2000.
- I. Cranz, "Priests, Pollution and the Demonic: Evaluating Impurity in the Hebrew Bible in Light of Assyro-Babylonian Texts," *JANER* 14 (2014), pp. 68–86.
- D. J. Davies, "An Interpretation of Sacrifice in Leviticus," ZAW 89 (1977), pp. 387–399.
- M. Dahood, Psalms II: 51-100 (AB 17), Electronic Edition, Garden City: Doubleday, 1965.
- A. Dillmann, Die Bücher Exodus und Leviticus, 3d ed., V. Ryssel (ed.), Leipzig: F. Hirzel, 1897.
- M. Douglas, Purity and Danger, London: Routledge, 1966.
  - ------ "Atonement in Leviticus," *JSQ* 1 (1993–94), pp. 109–130.
- S. R. Driver, *Book of Leviticus: A New English Translation*, New York: Dodd, Mead, 1898. *The Book of Exodus*, Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1911.
- R. Eichler, The Ark and the Cherubim, Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck, 2021.
- H. Eilberg-Schwartz, "Israel in the Mirror of Nature: Animal Metaphors in the Ritual and Narratives of Ancient Israel," *Journal of Ritual Studies* 2 (1988), pp. 1–30.
  - *—— The Savage in Judaism: An Anthropology of Israelite Religion and Ancient Judaism,* Bloomington: Indiana University Press, 1990.
- M. Eliade, The Sacred and the Profane, New York: Harcourt Brace Jovanovich, 1959.

- D. Ellens, "Leviticus 15: Contrasting Conceptual Associations Regarding Women," in Reading the Hebrew Bible for a New Millennium: Form, Concept and Theological Perspective. Volume 2: Exegetical and Theological Studies (Studies in Antiquity and Christianity), W. Kim, et al. (eds.), Harrisburg: Trinity Press International, 2000, pp. 124–151.
- K. Elliger, Leviticus (HAT 4), Tübingen: Mohr, 1966.
- Z. Farber, "The Purification of a Niddah: The Torah Requirement," *TheTorah.com* (2014), https://www.thetorah.com/article/the-purification-of-a-niddah-the-torah-requirement.
- A. Faust and H. Katz, "The Archaeology of Purity and Impurity: A Case-Study from Tel 'Eton, Israel," *Cambridge Archaeological Journal* 27 (2017), pp. 1–27.
- Y. Feder, "On *kuppuru, kippēr* and Etymological Sins that Cannot be Wiped Away," *VT* 60 (2010), pp. 535–545.
- "Contagion and Cognition: Bodily Experience and the Conceptualization of Pollution (*tum 'ah*) in the Hebrew Bible," *JNES* 72 (2013), pp. 151–167.

— "The Purification of a Niddah: The Legal Responsibility of the Reader,"

*TheTorah.com* (2014), https://www.thetorah.com/article/the-purification-of-a-niddah-the-legal-responsibility-of-the-reader.

- *"Tum'ah*: Ritual Impurity or Fear of Contagious Disease?" *TheTorah.com* (2019), https://www.thetorah.com/article/tumah-ritual-impurity-or-fear-of-contagious-disease.
- E. Feldman, Biblical and Post-Biblical Defilement and Mourning, New York: Ktav, 1977.
- E. Firmage, "Zoology," ABD, Electronic Edition, New York: Yale University Press, 1992.
- D. Fleming, "The Biblical Tradition of Anointing Priests," JBL 117 (1998), pp. 401–414.
- E. Fox, The Five Books of Moses, New York: Schocken Books, 1997.
- J. Freiberg, "Numbers and Counting," *ABD*, Electronic Edition, New York: Yale University Press, 1992.
- H. Frey-Anthes, "Concepts of 'Demons' in Ancient Israel," *Die Welt des Orients* 38 (2008), pp. 38–52.
- R. E. Friedman, Who Wrote the Bible, New York: Harper and Row, 1987.
   The Bible with Sources Revealed: A New View into the Five Books of Moses, San Francisco: Harper San Francisco, 2003.
- T. Frymer-Kensky, "Pollution, Purification and Purgation in Biblical Israel," in *The Word of the Lord Shall Go Forth: Essays in Honor of David Noel Freedman in Celebration of His Sixtieth Birthday*, C. L. Meyers and M. O'Connor (eds.), Winona Lake: Eisenbrauns, 1983, pp. 399–414.
- N. Füglister, "Sühne durch Blut zur Bedeutung von Leviticus 17,11," in *Studien zum Pentateuch, W. Kornfeld Festschrift*, G Braulik (ed.), Salzburg: Herder, 1977, pp. 143–165.
- R. Gane, *Cult and Character: Purification Offerings, Day of Atonement, and Theodicy,* Winona Lake: Eisenbrauns, 2005.
- A. Gardiner, "The Baptism of Pharaoh," JEA 36 (1950), pp. 3–12.
- E. Gerstenberger, *Leviticus* (OTL), Electronic Edition, Louisville: Westminster John Knox, 1996.
- - It," in *Perspectives on Purity and Purification in the Bible*, B. J. Schwartz, D. P. Wright, J. Stackert, and N. S. Meshel (eds.), LHBOTS 474, London: T&T Clark, 2008, pp. 77–83.

- B. Gordon, "Health and the Origins of the Miqveh," *Journal of Ancient Judaism* 11 (2020), pp. 418–459.
- F. H. Gorman, *Divine Presence and Community: A Commentary on the Book of Leviticus*, Grand Rapids: Eerdmans, 1997.
- Y. Goto, et al., "Physical and Mental Effects of Bathing: A Randomized Intervention Study," *Evidence-based complementary and alternative medicine: eCAM* (7 Jun. 2018), doi:10.1155/2018/9521086.
- E. Greenstein, "Biblical Law," in *Back to the Sources: Reading the Classic Jewish Texts*, B.W. Holtz (ed.), New York: Summit Books, 1984.
- J. H. Greenstone, *Numbers with Commentary*, Philadelphia: Jewish Publication Society of America, 1948.
- J. Grossman, *The Sacrificial Service: Gestures of Flesh and Spirit* (Hebrew), Jerusalem: Magid Books, 2021.
- J. Grossman and E. Hadad, "The Ram of Ordination and Qualifying the Priests to Eat Sacrifices," *JSOT* 45 (2021), pp. 476–492.
- R. K. Harrison, *Leviticus, an Introduction and Commentary* (TOTC), Downers Grove: Inter-Varsity Press, 1980.
- J. E. Hartley, Leviticus (WBC 4), Electronic Edition, Dallas: Word Books, 1992.
- R. S. Heiss, "Leviticus," in *The Expositor's Bible Commentary: Genesis–Leviticus*, T. Longman III and D. E. Garland (eds.), Grand Rapids: Zondervan, 2008.
- T. Hieke, "Menstruation and Impurity: Regular Abstention from the Cult According to Leviticus 15:19–24 and Some Examples for the Reception of the Biblical Text in Early Judaism," in *Religion and Female Body in Ancient Judaism and Its Environments*, DCLS 28, G. G. Xeravits (ed.), Berlin: De Gruyter, 2015, pp. 54–70.
- S. O. Hills, A Semantic and Conceptual Study of the Root KPR in the Hebrew Old Testament with Special Reference to the Accadian Kuppuru, Ph.D. thesis, Johns Hopkins University, 1954.
- M. Himmelfarb, "Impurity and Sin in 4QD, 1QS, and 4Q512," DSD 8 (2001), pp. 9–37.
- C. Houtman, *Exodus: Volume 3* (HCOT), Leuven: Peeters, 2000.
- J. R. Humann, *The Ceremony of the Red Heifer: Its Purpose and Function in Narrative Context*, Ph.D. thesis, Durham University, 2011.
- I. Jacob and W. Jacob, "Flora," *ABD*, Electronic Edition, New York: Yale University Press, 1992.
- H. Katz, "'He Shall Bathe in Water; then He Shall Be Pure': Ancient Immersion Practice in the Light of Archaeological Evidence," *VT* 62 (2012), pp. 369–380.
- T. Kazen, "Disgust in Body, Mind, and Language: The Case of Impurity in the Hebrew Bible," in *Mixed Feelings and Vexed Passions: Exploring Emotions in Biblical Literature*, F. S. Spencer, *RBS* 90 (2017), Atlanta: SBL Press, pp. 97–115.
- Y. Kaufmann, *The Religion of Israel: From Its Beginnings to the Babylonian Exile*, Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1960.
- C. F. Keil and F. Delitzsch, *The Pentateuch*, vol. 2 (COT), J. Martin (trans), Edinburgh: T&T Clark, 1865.
- N. Kiuchi, *The Purification Offering in the Priestly Literature: Its Meaning and Function*, JSOT Sup 56, Sheffield: Sheffield Academic, 1987.
- J. Klawans, Impurity and Sin in Ancient Judaism, New York: Oxford University Press, 2000.
- I. Knohl, *The Sanctuary of Silence: The Priestly Torah and the Holiness School*, Winona Lake: Eisenbrauns, 2007.
- L. Kohler, W. Baumgartner, J. J. Stamm, and B. Hartmann, *The Hebrew and Aramaic Lexicon of the Old Testament* (HALOT), M. E. J. Richardson (trans.), Leiden: Brill, 1994-1996, 2000.

#### Bibliography

- J. Koller, U. Baumer, Y. Kaup, et al., "Analysis of a pharaonic embalming tar," *Nature* 425 (2003), p. 784.
- W. Kornfeld, "Reine und Unreine Tiere im Alten Testament," Kairos 7 (1965), pp. 134-147.
- S. N. Kramer, *The Sumerians: Their History, Culture, and Character*, Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1963.
- J. K. Kuemmerlin-McLean, "Demons," *ABD*, Electronic Edition, New York: Yale University Press, 1992.
- J. Lam, *Patterns of Sin in the Hebrew Bible: Metaphor, Culture, and the Making of a Religious Concept*, New York: Oxford University Press, 2016.
  - "On the Etymology of Biblical Hebrew <u>ה</u>טאָת: A Contribution to the 'Sin Offering'
  - vs. 'Purification Offering' Debate," *Journal of Semitic Studies* 65 (2020), pp. 325–346. — "Sin Is a Debt that Must Be Repaid," *TheTorah.com* (2021),
  - https://www.thetorah.com/article/sin-is-a-debt-that-must-be-repaid.
- W. G. Lambert, Ancient Mesopotamian Religion and Mythology: Selected Essays, A.R. George, T.M. Oshima (eds.), Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck, 2016.
- E. R. Leach, "Magical Hair," JRAIGBI 88 (1958), pp. 147-164.
- T. M. Lemos, "Where There Is Dirt, Is There System? Revisiting Biblical Purity Constructions," *JSOT* 89 (2013), pp. 265–294.
- J. D. Levenson, "Genesis," in *The Jewish Study Bible* (JSB), A. Berlin and M. Z. Brettler (eds.), New York: Oxford University Press, 2004, pp. 8–101.
- B. A. Levine, In the Presence of the Lord, Leiden: Brill, 1974.
- *—— Numbers 1–20* (AB 4), New York: Doubleday, 1993.
- *Numbers 21–36* (AB 4A), New York: Doubleday, 2000.
- L. Levy-Bruhl, Primitives and the Supernatural, New York: E.P. Dutton, 1935.
- M. J. Lundberg, "New Drawings and Photographs of Four Cypriot Inscriptions," in *Puzzling Out the Past: Studies in Northwest Semitic Languages and Literatures in Honor of Bruce Zuckerman*, S. Fine, W. T. Pitard, and M. J. Lundberg (eds.), Leiden: Brill, 2014, pp. 115–126.
- H. Maccoby, *Ritual and Morality: The Ritual Purity System and Its Place in Judaism*, Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1999.
- P. K. McCarter, II Samuel (AB 8A), Electronic Edition, Garden City: Doubleday, 1984.
- L. K. McClure, *Women in Classical Antiquity: From Birth to Death*, Hoboken: Wiley-Blackwell, 2019.
- J. A. McGuire, "Evening or Morning: When Does the Biblical Day Begin?" AUSS 46 (2008), Berrien Springs: Andrews University Press, pp. 201–214.
- J. Milgrom, "Sin-Offering or Purification-Offering?" VT 21 (1971), pp. 237–239.
- ——— "A Kid in Its Mother's Milk," *Direction* 12:3 (1981), pp. 7–8.
- ------ Numbers, JPS Torah Commentary, Philadelphia: Jewish Publication Society, 1989.
- *Leviticus 1–16* (AB 3), New York: Doubleday, 1991.
- ------- "The Rationale for Biblical Impurity," JANES 22 (1993), pp. 107–11.
- *Leviticus 17–22* (AB 3A), New York: Doubleday, 2000.
- *Leviticus 23–27* (AB 3B), New York: Doubleday, 2001.
- G. Mobley, *Samson and the Liminal Hero in the Ancient Near East*, LHBOTS 453, New York: T&T Clark, 2006.

- A. Mooventhan, L. Nivethitha, "Scientific Evidence-Based Effects of Hydrotherapy on Various Systems of the Body," *North American Journal of Medical Sciences* 6 (2014), pp. 199–209, doi:10.4103/1947-2714.132935.
- J. Morgenstern, "Supplementary Studies in the Calendars of Ancient Israel," *Hebrew Union College Annual* 10 (1935), pp. 1–148.
- J. G. Murphy, *Critical and Exegetical Commentary on the Book of Leviticus with a New Translation*, Andover: Warren F. Draper, 1872.
- A. Neufeld, "Hygiene Conditions in Ancient Israel (Iron Age)," *The Biblical Archaeologist* 34 (1971), pp. 41–66.
- R. A. Oden, Jr., "Cosmogony, Cosmology," *ABD*, Electronic Edition, New York: Yale University Press, 1992.
- S. M. Olyan, "What Do Shaving Rites Accomplish and What Do They Signal in Biblical Ritual Contexts?" *JBL* 117 (1998), pp. 611–622.
- A. L. Oppenheim, et al. (eds.), CAD, 21 vols., Chicago: Oriental Institute, 1956.
- E. Otto, "You Shall Not Wear Clothes Made of Wool and Linen Woven Together' (Deut. 22:11): Clothing in Biblical Law," in *Clothing and Nudity in the Hebrew Bible*, C. Berner, et al. (eds.), London: T&T Clark, 2019.
- W. Paschen, *Rein und Unrein. Untersuchung zur biblischen Wortgeschichte*, SANT 24, Munich: Kösel, 1970.
- G. Pinch, Egyptian Mythology: A Guide to the Gods, Goddesses, and Traditions of Ancient Egypt, Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2004.
- J. B. Pritchard (ed.), *Ancient Near Eastern Texts Relating to the Old Testament*, Third Edition (ANET 3), Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1969.
- W. H. Propp, *Exodus 1–18* (AB 2), New York: Doubleday, 1999. *Exodus 19–40* (AB 2A), New York: Doubleday, 2006.
- G. von Rad, Old Testament Theology, Vol. 1, New York: Harper & Row, 1962.
- B. G. Reed and B. R. Carr, "The Normal Menstrual Cycle and the Control of Ovulation," *Endotext*, MDText.com, Inc. (2018), https://pubmed.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/25905282/.
- D. Rudman, "Water for Impurity or Water of Impurity? The Red Cow of Numbers 19 Revisited," *OTE* 16 (2003), pp. 73–78.
- S. Sauneron, The Priests of Ancient Egypt, New York: Grove, 1960.
- A. Schimmel, *The Mystery of Numbers*, New York: Oxford University Press, 1993.
- B. J. Schwartz, "The Prohibitions Concerning the 'Eating' of Blood in Leviticus 17," in *Priesthood and Cult in Ancient Israel*, G. A. Anderson and S. M. Olyan (eds.), JSOTSup 125, Sheffield: JSOT, 1991, pp. 34–66.
  - "The Bearing of Sin in the Priestly Literature," in *Pomegranates and Golden Bells: Studies in Biblical, Jewish and Near Eastern Ritual, Law and Literature in Honour of Jacob Milgrom*, D. P. Wright, et al. (eds.), Winona Lake: Eisenbrauns, 1995, pp. 3–21.
     — "Leviticus," in *The Jewish Study Bible* (JSB), A. Berlin and M. Z. Brettler (eds.), New York: Oxford University Press, 2004, pp. 203–280.
- J. Scullion, "The Genesis Narrative," *ABD*, Electronic Edition, New York: Yale University Press, 1992.
- A. Selincourt (trans.), The Histories (Herodotus), Harmondsworth: Penguin, 1954.
- W. Smith, A Comprehensive Dictionary of the Bible, Mainly Abridged from Dr. WM. Smith's Dictionary of the Bible, S. W. Barnum (ed.), New York: Appleton, 1868.
- N. H. Snaith, Leviticus & Numbers, London: Oliphants, 1967.
- B. D. Sommer, "Isaiah," in *The Jewish Study Bible* (JSB), A. Berlin and M. Z. Brettler (eds.), New York: Oxford University Press, 2004, pp. 780–916.

- G. B. Sorlini, "The Megalithic Temples of Malta," in Archaeology and Fertility Cult in the Ancient Mediterranean: Papers Presented at the First International Conference on Archaeology of the Ancient Mediterranean, A. Bonanno (ed.), University of Malta, 1985.
- E. A. Speiser, Genesis (AB 1), Electronic Edition, Garden City: Doubleday, 1964.
- S. D. Sperling, "Blood," ABD, Electronic Edition, New York: Yale University Press, 1992.
- *Tanakh: The Holy Scriptures: The New JPS Translation according to the Traditional Hebrew Text* (NJPS), Philadelphia: Jewish Publication Society, 1985.
- M. S. Terry, *Biblical Hermeneutics: A Treatise on the Interpretation of the Old and New Testaments*, New York: Eaton & Mains, 1883.
- R. C. Thompson, The Devils and Evil Spirits of Babylonia, London: Luzac, 1903.
- M. Vervenne, "'The Blood Is the Life and the Life Is the Blood': Blood as Symbol of Life and Death in Biblical Tradition (Gen. 9,4)," in *Ritual and Sacrifice in the Ancient Near East* 55 (1994), pp. 451–470.
- R. Wallenfels and J. M. Sasson, *The Ancient Near East: An Encyclopedia for Students*, Vol. 4, New York: Scribner, 2000.
- J. W. Watts, *Ritual and Rhetoric in Leviticus: From Sacrifice to Scripture*, New York: Cambridge University Press, 2007.
- G. J. Wenham, *The Book of Leviticus* (NICOT 3), Electronic Edition, Grand Rapids: Eerdmans, 1981.
  - ------ "Why Does Sexual Intercourse Defile (Lev. 15,18)?" ZAW 95 (1983), pp. 432–434. ------ Genesis 1–15 (WBC 1), Electronic Edition, Grand Rapids: Zondervan, 1987.
- W. C. Wood, "The Religion of Canaan: From the Earliest Times to the Hebrew Conquest," *JBL* 35 (1916), pp. 1–133.
- D. P. Wright, "The Gesture of Hand Placement in the Hebrew Bible and in Hittite Literature," *JAOS* 106 (1986), pp. 433–446.

—— The Disposal of Impurity: Elimination Rites in the Bible and in Hittite and Mesopotamian Literature, Atlanta: Scholars Press, 1987.

- ------- "Heifer, Red," ABD, Electronic Edition, New York: Yale University Press, 1992.
- D. P. Wright and R. N. Jones, "Discharge," *ABD*, Electronic Edition, New York: Yale University Press, 1992.
- "Leprosy," ABD, Electronic Edition, New York: Yale University Press, 1992.

## Appendix: Purification Cases and Rites

The table below summarizes methods of purification by category and case (explicit references only), including Levite dedication and priestly consecration.<sup>417</sup> Cases of secondary transmission are indicated by brackets, and tertiary transmission by curly brackets.

Main Category	Case	Wash	Launder	Shave	Sprinkle	Daub	Sacrifice	Duration (days)	Verses
Impure animal carcasses	[Touch]	х*						1 (eve)	Lev 11:24, 27, 31, 39; *22:6
	[Carry]		Х					1 (eve)	Lev 11:25, 28, 40
	[Eat]	х*	Х					1 (eve)	Lev 11:40, *17:15
	[שֶׁרָא] on utensil	х						1 (eve)	Lev 11:32
Childbirth	Birth of a boy						х	7 + 33	Lev 12:2–4, 6–7
	Birth of a girl						х	14 + 66	Lev 12:5–7
Skin צְרַעַת	Purification	x2	x2	x2	х	х	х	Heal + 7 + 1	Lev 14:3– 31
	Marks: faded, didn't spread <sup>418</sup>		Х					7 (quarantine)	Lev 13:6
	Scalp/beard: didn't spread, not deep		Х					7 (quarantine)	Lev 13:34
Cloth/leather צָרַעַת	Outbreak disappears	x2						7 + 7 (quarantine)	Lev 13:58
House צְרַעַת	Didn't spread after replastering				х			7 (quarantine)	Lev 14:49– 53

Table 12. Purification cases and rites

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>417</sup> I include consecration of the priests here, even though it is uncertain whether this is a case of purification. As explained in Sec. 10.3, it shares a daubing rite with the מִצֹרְע, and both purification and consecration work along the same vector, adding life-force.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>418</sup> There are seven cases of skin צָרְעָת presented in Lev 13. I include only the cases of marks and scalp/beard outbreaks in this table because they alone call for laundering if the person passes the priest's inspection.

Main Category	Case	Wash	Launder	Shave	Sprinkle	Daub	Sacrifice	Duration (days)	Verses
Abnormal Genital	Man/זָב/	x <sup>419</sup>	х				х	Cease + 7 + 1	Lev 15:13– 14
Discharge	[Touch bedding]	х	Х					1 (eve)	Lev 15:5
	[Sits on seat]	х	Х					1 (eve)	Lev 15:6
	[Touch זָב]	х	Х					1 (eve)	Lev 15:7
	[Spat on by נָב]	х	Х					1 (eve)	Lev 15:8
	[Touch seat]							1 (eve)	Lev 15:10
	[Carry seat]	х	Х					1 (eve)	Lev 15:11
	[Wood touched]	х							Lev 15:12
	זָבָה/Woman						х	Cease + 7 + 1	Lev 15:28– 29
	[Touch bed, seat]	х	Х					1 (eve)	Lev 15:27
Seminal	Ejaculation	х						1 (eve)	Lev 15:16
emission	[Cloth with semen]		х					1 (eve)	Lev 15:17
	Sexual intercourse	х						1 (eve)	Lev 15:18
Menstruation	Menstrual flow							7	
	[Touch bedding]	х	Х					1 (eve)	Lev 15:21
	[Touch seat]	х	Х					1 (eve)	Lev 15:22
	[Man has sex with]							7	Lev 15:24
Corpse contamination	[Person contaminated by corpse]	Х	X		Х			7 (to eve*)	Num 19:11, 14, *19; 31:19, 24
	{Touch corpse- contam. person}							1 (eve)	Num 19:22
	[Vessels and tent]				Х				Num 19:18
	[War spoils]	x <sup>420</sup>			х				Num 31:23
Red cow	[Throw into fire]	х	Х					1 (eve)	Num 19:7
	[Burn]	х	Х					1 (eve)	Num 19:8
	[Gather ashes]		Х					1 (eve)	Num 19:10
	[מֵי נִדָּה Sprinkle]		Х					1 (eve)	Num 19:21
	[מֵי נִדָּה Touch]							1 (eve)	Num 19:21
Nazirite	Became impure			head			х	7 + 1	Num 6:9– 11

 $<sup>^{419}</sup>$  Here איים מיים is specified (Lev 15:13).  $^{420}$  Only items that cannot withstand passing through fire (Num 31:23).

## Appendix

Main Category	Case	Wash	Launder	Shave	Sprinkle	Daub	Sacrifice	Duration (days)	Verses
Levite dedication	-		Х	Х	X		Х	1	Num 8:7– 21
Priests' consecration	-	Х			x <sup>421</sup>	Х	х	7	Exod 29, Lev 8

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>421</sup> Blood and anointing oil (Exod 29:21), as distinct from מָיָם אָשָׁם + blood/ash mixtures in other cases.

## תקציר

מטרתו של מחקר זה היא להבין את משמעותו של מושג הטומאה הכוהני באמצעות בחינת טקסי טהרה. ניסיונותיהם של חוקרים מודרניים לזהות את הרציונל העומד מאחורי מושג הטומאה במקרא נעשו בדרך כלל מתוך חיפוש אחר מכנה משותף בין **מקורות** הטומאה על פי המקור הכוהני (P) : פגרים של בעלי חיים, הפרשות מאיברי המין (הקשורות ללידה, נידה וזיבה פתולוגית), צרעת, גופת אדם ופריטי פולחן ספציפיים המשמשים לטיהור (אפר פרה אדומה, לדוגמה). רבים ממקרים אלה נראים כקשורים להתפשטותן של מחלות, ועל כן הגישה הרווחת במחקר מזה שנים היא שחוקי הטומאה של המקור הכוהני מתרכזים בעיקר סביב תחום ההיגיינה. קו מחשבה נוסף המבוסס על השוואה עם מקורות חוץ־מקראיים קושר את המקרים הללו לפלישתם של שדים.

הצעה מסוג אחר היא שתגובות ספונטניות של גועל ופחד הן המגדירות תופעה כלשהי כ״טמאה״. חוקרים אחרים נוקטים בגישה סמלית יותר ורואים בחוקי הטומאה דרך סוציולוגית לתקשר נורמות ואידיאלים הנוגעים למוסר או לגבולות חברתיים. אחת מתתי הגישות בתוך הגישה הזו תופסת את הטומאה כסמל למוות. תומך בולט בתת הגישה הזו הוא יעקב מילגרום, המתאר את המונחים ״טומאה״ ו״קדושה״ כמונחים הופכיים המסמלים בהתאמה מוות וחיים. ברוח זו, הוא מפרש את כל מקרי הטומאה כקשורים בדרך כלשהי למוות. הספקנים לגבי טיעון זה מציינים כי לא כל מקרי הטומאה של המקור הכוהני מתאימים כל כך בקלות למודל של ״חיים-מוות״, והם טוענים כי אין סיבה אחת ויחידה שבכוחה להסביר את כל המקרים כולם. חוקרים אחרים מרחיקים לכת וטוענים כי המקרים המובאים במקור הכוהני את כל המקרים כולם. חוקרים אחרים מרחיקים לכת וטוענים כי המקרים המובאים במקור הכוהני להסביר את הדברים לאשורם.

הנקודה הראשונה שיש לשים לב אליה היא שתיאוריות אלו אינן בהכרח מתחרות זו בזו, אלא מתארות רבדים שונים בתפיסה הכוללת של הטומאה : בבסיס עומדות התופעות עצמן בהן נתקלים בני אדם בחייהם. על גביהן מצויות התגובות המוחשיות (ומעוגנות חברתית) – גועל, פחד או דחייה, והתגובות הללו מניעות נורמות חברתיות, טאבו, אמצעי הפרדה וטקסי טהרה, והרובד האחרון הוא שכבת ההסברים למכלול החוויות הללו.

ההסבר הנפוץ ביותר בעולם העתיק לטומאה הוא שמקורה בעולם השדים. שדים הם תושבי העולם התחתון הנטפלים אל האדם, בעיקר כאשר הוא פגיע, וגורמים למוות ולמחלות. עם זאת, המקור הכוהני דוגל במסגרת תיאולוגית שבה ה׳ הוא הישות העל־טבעית היחידה, וחוקרים רבים רואים בחוקי הטומאה

א

של המקור הכוהני כדחייה של דמונולוגיה. מהו אם כן (ואם בכלל) ההסבר החלופי של המקור הכוהני לטומאה?

בניגוד למילגרום, הסובר כי ההתעלמות של המקור הכוהני מנושא השדים נועדה לשלול את האמונה כי בטומאה יש פוטנציאל לפגוע בבני אדם, אני מציע שהחידוש העיקרי של המקור הכוהני הוא **הסרת ההאנשה** מן הטומאה, דהיינו היפטרות מכל ישות על־טבעית מלבד ה׳. עם זאת, עדיין קיים בטומאה מימד של מוות, ותפיסת העולם העתיק הייתה שיש ׳׳כוחות של מוות׳׳ הקשורים לתופעות כגון לידה, פתולוגיות מסוימות וכמובן למיתה עצמה. על כן לפי המקור הכוהני הטומאה איננה פלישה של שדים אלא ׳׳כוח מוות׳׳ חסר אישיות. אני מסכים שהמוות הוא רכיב של הטומאה. עם זאת, בניגוד למילגרום, אבקש לטעון כי המוות אינו המרכיב המאפיין של מקרי הטומאה במקור הכוהני. אלא, נושא המוות עולה רק דרך קישורה של הטומאה לעולם התחתון.

הראיות הטקסטואליות שהמקור הכוהני תופס את הטומאה ככוח מוות נמצאות לא במקרי הטומאה עצמם אלא **בטקסי הטיהור** הבאים לבטל את הטומאה. חוקרים אחדים הצביעו על מוטיב ה״חיים״ המופיע לאורך טקסי הטיהור של המקור הכוהני, מוטיב המתאפיין בדרך כלל כ״חיים המסירים את המוות״ ולפיו טיהור הוא למעשה טקס של **מֵירוּק**. אני מסכים עם היבט זה של הטיהור, אך אני מציע כי בנוסף להשפעותיו הממרקות, ברוב המקרים נועד הטיהור **למלא ולחדש**. כוחות המוות, מלבד היותם דבר שיש להסירו, מרוקנים את כוח החיים מן האדם כאשר הם משתלטים עליו. טקסטים מהמזרח הקדום מעידים על הנזק, המחלות וההשפעות מפחיתות החיים שגורמת פלישתם של שדים. הטיהור לעומת זאת מחדש וממלא את חלל החיים שהותירה נוכחות המוות, והוא משרה חיים וחיוניות מחודשים על האדם העובר היטהרות.

חלקו הגדול של מחקר זה הוא סקירת טקסי הטיהור ותהליכיהם על פי סדר הופעתם במקור הכוהני. הוא מתחיל בבחינת המרכיב הנפוץ ביותר בטיהורים של המקור הכוהני – מרווחי זמן מוגדרים : ערב, שלושה ימים, כפולות של שבעה ימים, היום השמיני וארבעים יום. כל אלו הם מספרים טיפולוגיים הידועים במקרא ובעולם העתיק כבעלי יכולת מאגית להעניק שלמות והתחדשות. לאחר מכן אדון בטקסי הטהרה הנערכים במרחב הביתי, הרחיצה והכביסה. יסוד המים הוא יסוד מרכזי בטקסים אלה, ואעיין באופן שבו מושג המים נתפס במזרח הקדום, הן כאמצעי ניקוי והן כחומר שבכוחו להעניק חיים והתחדשות. באותה קטגוריה של טקס טהרה אישי שכזה נמצא גם הגילוח; נראה כי במקור הכוהני תפקידו הוא בעיקר למ<u>ר</u>ק, והוא מתבצע רק במקרים נדירים.

ב

תקציר

תקציר

לאחר מכן אדון בטקס פרה אדומה – טקס הטהרה מטומאת המת – ובטקס שתי הציפורים שנערך במקרה של צרעת (של העור או של הבית), וכן במרכיבים המשותפים לשניהם : ארז, חוט שֶׁנִי, אזוב ומַיִם חַיִים (מי מעיין). אדום/דם, חיים, תנועה וכוח הם מוטיבים המצויים במרכיבים אלה, והם משתלבים יחד ויוצרים נוסחאות עוצמתיות להוקעת כוחות המוות והוספת חיים על המועמד לטיהור. בתוך העיון בטקס פרה אדומה אחקור את המאפיין החריג והפרדוקסלי שלו, האפר המקנה טומאה לנוגעים בו ובה בעת מטהר אדם אשר נחשף לגופת המת.

לאחר מכן, אבקש לבחון את תפקידם של הקורבנות בתהליך הטיהור. אני טוען כי שלב הקורבנות מתרחש רק לאחר שנפתרה בעיית הטומאה, וכי מטרתו (כפי שמצביע הפועל הנלווה ׳׳ִפְּפֵר׳׳) היא לנקות את האדם מחובותיו האישיות כלפי ה׳. לבסוף, אבחן את מריחת הדם והשמן, פעולה המבוצעת רק במקרה של צרעת עור ובהקדשת הכוהנים. הדם נחשב לכוח הנושא חיים, ושמן לחומר מחייה וכזה שבכוחו להביא את האדם למעמד חדש. אני טוען כי הטרנספורמציות מטמא לטהור ומטהור לקדוש, מתרחשות שתיהן על אותו ציר של הגברת החיים. שתיהן כוללות הוספת חיוניות, מה שאני מכנה ׳יפלוס׳׳. במקרה של טומאה, פלוס מבטל מינוס – החיוניות מונעת את ההשפעות מפחיתות החיים של כוחות המוות.

נראה כי סקירה זו של טקסי הטהרה במקור הכוהני קובעת ברכה לעצמה, שכן כפי הידוע לי טרם נעשתה סקירה דומה במחקר המודרני. נוסף על כך אך אני מקווה שאצליח להציג כראוי כיצד המרכיבים, הטקסים והשפה המשמשים לטיהור בטקסטים של המקור הכוהני מצביעים על מוטיב ״חיים״ רחב שבו טקסים חדורי חיים מתגברים על כוחות המוות. לטיהור בוודאי יש תפקיד ממרק, אך אני טוען – על בסיס מקורות מהמקרא ומהמזרח הקדום – שטקסים אלה נועדו אף להחיות ולחדש. עבודה זו נעשתה בהדרכתו של דייר רענן אייכלר מן המחלקה לתנייך של אוניברסיטת בר-אילן.

תשפייב

רמת גן

עבודה זו מוגשת כחלק מהדרישות לשם קבלת תואר מוסמך במחלקה לתנ״ך על שם זלמן שמיר של אוניברסיטת בר-אילן

דוד בר-כהן

# טקסי התחדשות : הערות על הטיהור במקור הכוהני

אוניברסיטת בר-אילן